

Little Book Open

Securing a Narrow Clear Passage
to the Future



David Butterworth

Overview

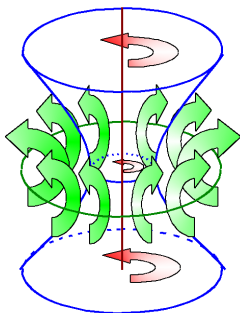
I have combined three books into a philosophy called Little Book Open. It is a scientific book that has elements of a unified approach to Physics using dark matter, elements on how life started for Biology, and a general understanding of who we are as a people. It is my attempt to understand life and the universe; to see the truth without religion, traditions, or elitist intellectuals getting in the way. It is based upon the new science of subspace singularities that not only explains gravity and electromagnetic forces but also explains the origins of life as well. This is my attempt to get us away from the new Dark Age that we are headed into and instead move into to a new golden age of a new Renaissance. Welcome to a new Renaissance Age where we understand our importance and our relationship with God. See a new future with affordable energy, a free economy, and a new distribution of wealth; the year of the Jubilee where all debts are forgiven and all homes are returned to their owners.

Revised August 30, 2015

Little Book Open

-

Securing a Narrow Clear Passage to the Future



By David Butterworth

Lulu.com – Self Publishing

Copyright © 2012 by David Butterworth

You are free to share, copy, distribute and transmit this work and to adapt this work and to translate this book into another language under the following conditions:

Attribution: You must attribute the work in your leading section, chapter, or slide with the author's name (but not in any way that suggests that I endorse you or your work).

Noncommercial: You may not use this work for commercial purposes.

Commercial: English language paperback and hardbound books will only be obtained through lulu.com bookstore.

With the understanding that:

Any of the above conditions can be waived if you get permission from the copyright holder

Where the work or any of its elements is in the public domain under applicable law, that status is in no way affected by the license.

Table of Contents

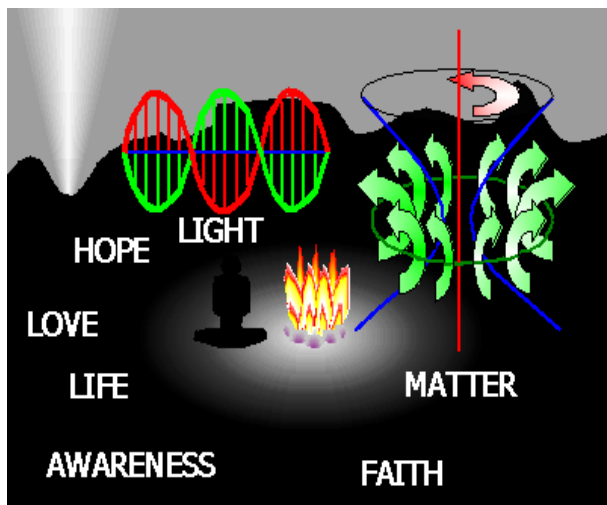
Forward to Main Book: Introduction	9
Main Book Chapter 1: The Quest	15
Main Book Chapter 2: Redistribution	21
Main Book Chapter 3: Thanks and Acknow.	25
 Forward to Book 1: Renaissance II the Search	 29
Book 1 Chapter 1: The Search	31
Book 1 Chapter 2: Reality of Physical Space	43
Book 1 Chapter 3: Reality of Mental Space	55
Book 1 Chapter 4: Reality of Spiritual Space	69
Book 1 Chapter 5: Reality of Faith	83
Book 1 Chapter 6: Reality of Hope	103
Book 1 Chapter 7: Reality of Love	121
Book 1 Chapter 8: Reality of Choice	139
Book 1 Chapter 9: Reality of Beginning	161
 Forward to Book 2: Physics Revisited	 181
Book 2 Chapter 1: Description of Subspace	187
Book 2 Chapter 2: Particle Models	201
Book 2 Chapter 3: Particles Interactions	225
Book 2 Chapter 4: Composite Models	233
Book 2 Chapter 5: Physics Revisited	243
Book 2 Chapter 6: The Future	285
Book 2 Chapter 7: The Vision	291

Table of Contents continues

Forward to Book 3: Biology Revisited	297
Book 3 Chapter 1: Nature of Space and Life	301
Book 3 Chapter 2: Awareness and Order	305
Book 3 Chapter 3: Particle Awareness	309
Book 3 Chapter 4: The Ordering of Life	313
Book 3 Chapter 5: Distributed Intelligence	317
Book 3 Chapter 6: Simple Machines	319
Book 3 Chapter 7: In Conclusion	321
Forward to Book 4: Human Spirit Revisited	325
Book 4 Chapter 1: Introduction	327
Book 4 Chapter 2: Essence of What We Are	329
Book 4 Chapter 3: The Truth	333
Book 4 Chapter 4: In Conclusion	335
Forward for Book 5: The Heart of Universe	341
Book 5 Chapter 1: Changing Our Direction	345
Book 5 Chapter 2: Finding the Heart	349
Book 5 Chapter 3: Case against Atheism	363
Book 5 Chapter 4: Case against Religious	369
Book 5 Chapter 5: Case against the Elite	381
Book 5 Chapter 6: Case against new Tech.	403
Book 5 Chapter 7: Case for Renaissance	419
Book 5 Chapter 8: Changing Our View	439
Book 5 Chapter 9: Promises of Jesus	459
Book 5 Chapter 10: The Lord's Sacrifice	505
Book 5 Chapter 11: The End of an Age	527

Little Book Open

Securing a Narrow Clear Passage to the Future



Forward to Main Book: Introduction

This is a philosophy book. It is my attempt:

- 1.To correlate an understanding about life and the universe into an inclusive whole.
- 2.To get to the essence of science and a relationship with God.
- 3.To see the truth without abstract dogma and dismissive intellectuals getting in the way.
- 4.To understand reality.

This may be a strange starting point; connecting religion and science. Many feel that these occupations are opposites of each other and can never relate. But they are both a search for truth and if we are honest with ourselves we can obtain insights here. And insight is the one thing that we need now more than ever if we are going to enter a new age.

This is a little book open for understanding. It is not buried in math, abstract ideas, or high

sounding words. It is based upon the fact that concepts must be as simple as possible. And these few simple concepts will provide us the insights needed to obtain the narrow, clear passage to a rich and glorious future.

I have a new view of reality. It's based upon looking at the discoveries of Physics and unifying the concepts into a single approach I've called subspace. This has the promise of limitless energy, force fields and warp travel to the stars. But more than this it explains life, awareness, and internal feelings. There is more to life than what we know. Will you take a chance and explore?

We live in three different worlds which is the reason why we have always been confused about life. We live on Earth, the physical universe where our daily lives take place. We also live in heaven on the insides in our deepest, innermost nature; but this has been experienced by too few of us. There's peace here, love, joy, beauty beyond description. And in between, where the physical body meets the heavenly wonders, there is the soul.

This is where the images from the eye meet the colors of the rainbow. This is where the notes of the ear meet the music of our hearts. This is the spiritual world. All of this I can show you in this book. It does exist, it is real.

There's faith here; enough to move mountains and to drive dreams. There's love for sacrifice and hope for the future. So come with me I will show you a future bright with promise. I will show you truths that have been hidden and only guessed at since civilization began. Let me show you something new.

I am being honest and open here. I've seen the truth and I've seen the lie. And having seen life I am not going to stay quiet. And I am being very bold in naming this book "Little Book Open". For I think that this is the book described in chapter 10 of the book of Revelation in the Christian Bible. And the Christians are not going to be very pleased about it either. Neither are the new age spiritualists, nor the scientists for this book is a challenge to all of them. It's a shaking of their very foundations. In fact I'll just invite the

young readers to read this book. The older generations may not want to hear this message and even know that these thoughts exist.

What is truth and what is tradition? What are we sure of and when do we just pretend? Do we just go through the motions of what's expected of us? Are we alive or are we just the walking dead? And if so what killed us? Where did the promises of life go? If you ever asked yourself these questions you might want to read this book.

And know that the politically minded and the practically minded people will do everything in their power to stop this book. They will deny its statements, question its science, and mock its purpose. Fine; I didn't write it for them. I wrote it for you. Will you take a chance to read it?

Open your eyes to a new way of looking at the universe and at yourselves. Open your mind to a new way of thinking, grasping insights of new truths. Open your ears to the sounds of life around us. We are a part of the natural

world. Open your heart in accepting other people as they are and become compassionate. This is a new book for a new way for we know what we've done with the old ways and we see the results. It's time to turn our lives around.

If you have ever felt unimportant, read this book. If you feel that you have never been allowed to accomplish the things that you wanted to accomplish, read this book. If you are looking for more, look here for this is a new beginning. And this book will be unlike any book that you have read before, for I will not be bound by the traditions of men. I am searching for something new.

You need to read this book today; you may not have tomorrow. You can have your life back. You can have everything that has been stolen from you and more! You have a purpose for your life, a reason for being here. You're important. Help me with this mission. Explore this book. Read it and grow. If you believe it, then help me prove it and turn our future into something glorious.

David Butterworth, Earth 2011

Main Book Chapter 1: The Quest

I sit by the fire. The fire gives me warmth and protects me from the surrounding darkness. The fire is my friend. There is truth in the fire.

To my right is a path. It has snaked its way up the mountain until it reached this point which is near the summit. You are on this path and have been for some time. The path goes past me up over the mountain into your future. I do not know what is over there. I will not be going over there. I only know that it is glorious.

The pass is narrow and it has been secured for only a few people, those that seek to understand. Come and sit with me for a while and I will tell you what I've learned. It will give you strength to continue over the pass. Many have given up before this spot and it would be a shame for you to give up now, so close to the end.

We live in a strange age where nothing is real. We spend our energies on our amusements

where we create fantasy worlds with heroes and solvable situations. We generate books, magazines, music videos, movies, television shows, and now have created whole worlds on the computer internet devoted to our fantasies. We mark these products with a label saying it's "for entertainment purposes only" to protect them from the devils whose ravish appetites have destroyed everything in the real world. They have destroyed our banking system, our justice system, and our very government. They are making a world for the elite, the privileged few that have everything while the rest of us sit frustrated without. In other words we are entering a new Dark Age, what I call the technological Dark Age.

Let me show you an alternative destination. For this book is about entering a new Renaissance Age. This is an age containing a new discovery and a new hope; an age where your dreams can come true. This new age starts with this book but it is dependent upon you. You will have to confirm this book; you will have to live in the promises and prove

these truths. Otherwise the Dark Age will descend upon us and all of our knowledge and hopes will be eliminated for hundreds of years.

This book is a trilogy of three books written over a twelve year period. The first book contains the promise of the new renaissance. The second book shows the science of dark matter singularity particles that not only explains a unified approach to physics but to life as well. The third book is the defining difference between the current age and the new age to come and how we can prepare for it.

You may not believe in spirits but I believe the angel that directed this book is rather large and shouldn't be crossed. His right foot is on the waters, his left foot upon the land, and he towers high above the clouds. And when he roars like a lion, he is signaling the end of time and the finish of the mystery of God.

I expect we now have a thousand years left where the Lord himself will be with us here on Earth. And this book is given to us to make us ready. And it is sweet in the mouth when we

taste all the Lord has given us, but it will be bitter in the stomach after we digest this book and realized what we have allowed to happen to this world.

And note this one last point before we begin. This is not a book of judgment against people; the Lord has given us an age of grace. It was His free gift. You can choose to walk in this gift or not, it is your choice. But the real world is a world of truth and you cannot enter your future until you have faced truth fully.

I am not here to change your religion. Keep it, however you deem God to be. God doesn't want your religion, He desires your heart. He wants you to trust Him, to love Him, to have a relationship with Him. This has to be real, with no one else in the way. Be changed by Him, He is your maker.

People are never the problem; spirits are the problem. We have allowed spirits to get in the way of worshiping God and we end up worshiping the spirits.

Lord forgive us; we were deceived. Help us
tear deceit from our eyes so we can see clearly
and deception from our lips so we can speak
the truth. And let us live for You and be a
blessing to each other. Amen

So be of good courage and enter into to your
future. I am welcoming you to a whole new
age; one where God is not hidden. Welcome
to Little Book Open.

Main Book Chapter 2: Redistribution

I have given the electronic book at no cost so it can be distributed around the internet to reach as many people as possible. I have the copyrights so others cannot steal it and hide it. If you can translate this electronic book into another language please do so. I give you all rights to make an electronic book in another language other than English; I only ask that you keep the cost as low as possible so that all can benefit from this effort.

And he said unto me, You must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

Revelation 10:11(Chapter 10, Verse 11) KJ
(King James Version)

This has been the hardest book to write. I have been striving to understand reality and that required releasing falsehoods and trite answers. I wanted to understand why things happened, to know in the deepest way possible the interactions. And I journeyed further than I ever expected to go. This was very

satisfactory although I am surprised that no one else was interested. So surprised I decided to drop everything, erased the books, and try to find a purpose in life somewhere else. But I couldn't, God was looking at me and was telling me to finish this work. It wasn't mine to direct, it was His and the time is short. If you have ever been chased by God then you know how scary that experience has been. Don't fool yourself, God is loving but God is strict. And if He wants something done, believe me it's going to get done.

It is my hope that after you read this book you will have the same calling. Help however you can. If you can gain new insights to physics or biology please publish. If you can use these ideas to eliminate the energy crises or create force fields, connect with business men that have the same vision. If you can find a way to stop the hate and promote the love please do so. The world is waiting.

And before you start the book, you need to know where I am coming from. I live in the United States, in the Midwest. I am an

electrical engineer, go to an Episcopal church, raised a family with my wife of 40 years, and am now retired.

When I was young I didn't know about Christ. My dad read many books about all of the religions mostly Buddhism and Hindu. And that was the knowledge that was passed down to me. It wasn't the customs or ceremonies that interested him; it was the inner journey, the one to self-realization. And like many people, I've had my experiences. But the one that affected me the most was the one I had at 17 years of age. Since I am of the mind that only believes in one reality the experience left me with a puzzle. Now 47 years later I can provide the answer to that puzzle; one reality across two universes. There is more between heaven and earth than is dreamt of in our philosophy.

Main Book Chapter 3: Thanks and Acknowledgments

My thanks to the following internet sites for information, details and insights used in this book:

1) Bill McGinnis Ministries - “Feeding His Sheep”

www.patriot.net/users/bmcdin/ministries.html

2) Enotes

www.enots.com

3) Britannica Encyclopedia

m.eb.com

4) JPs Real Estate Charts

www.jparsons.net

5) The True Cost of Credit

truecostofcredit.com

6) NIST Reference on Constants, Units, and Uncertainty

physics.nist.gov

7) The Dirac Equation

electron6.phys.utk.edu

8) Center for Responsible Politics

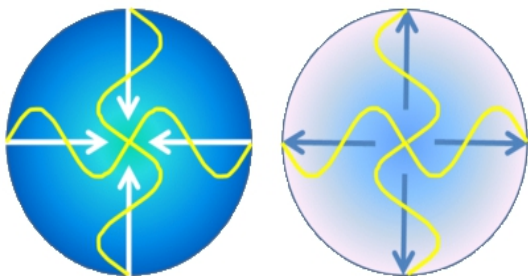
www.opensecrets.org

- 9) State of Working America
www.stateofworkingamerica.org
- 10) Human Population Growth Charts
www.subdude-site.com
- 11) Top Foreign Stocks
topforeignstocks.com
- 12) US National Debt Clock FAQ
www.brillig.com
- 13) US Code
uscode.house.gov
- 14) United States Reports
www.supremecourt.gov
- 15) Code of Federal Regulations
www.gpo.gov
- 16) CNN Money
money.cnn.com
- 17) Kenneth Copeland Ministries
www.kcm.org

I also want to thank my wife and my kids for their patience and understanding as the old man pursued his dreams.

Renaissance II

The Search for a New Beginning



Forward to Book 1: Renaissance II the Search for a New Beginning

This is my first book written at the turn of the millennium. It's a philosophy book that asks the question "what is real?" There are many things in our lives that pretend to be real, requiring our time and money. And they have grown to be an overwhelming burden. Why? Maybe because we lost our perspective of what is real and what isn't. Things that our ancestors knew and we forgot.

We have been manipulated our entire lives by those who wish to control us. The sales pitches, the government promises, the propaganda have penetrated our thoughts and our very vocabulary. We need to recover and that requires the truth. We need to know reality.

This book is a search for a new way of life. And the key to life is growth and the key to growth is purpose. So it is my hope that this book will help you strengthen the purpose of your life. And if you feel that you have no

purpose then I hope this book will plant the seed of faith for a new future.

And I do not want to change your religion. I want you to see life, to see love, to see hope for the future. And this requires the truth. That is the whole point of a philosophy book is to find the truth. Even if it's painful, even if it's hard, let us explore the truth together.

David Butterworth, Earth 2011

Book 1 Chapter 1: The Search

I am on a quest, a search for a new beginning. For I have grown distrustful of the old beginning and what we have made of it. When the Renaissance was young there was a hopeful expectation of the value of the human soul. The arts and the sciences flourished. Education was the chief aim of the people. In it we started to realize that magnificent splendor which existed within. We actually admitted that we were beautiful and we were allowed to express our thoughts, to have our dream's dance among the heavens. By our honesty in searching for truth we established ourselves as a people.

But we threw away this treasure in our search for wealth, for power, for a chance to dominate and destroy. We had a glimpse of our true nature and of our own importance, but we blocked our view of it. Blinded by that light, we hid ourselves, denying everything that we saw. "Life is not important" we would lie. Then we followed with "Everything is cause and effect in a random occurrence," "I can say

and do anything I want as long as it's for my benefit," and "The only thing that's important is the flow of money; who gets it, who keeps it, and who denied it."

We join groups of corroborators and develop power pools of special interests, each with their own secret language and hidden agenda. We've returned to the medieval practice of re-dividing the world back into kingdoms and class structures; all in an attempt to hide from that awful and hideous truth that God loves us.

I have written this book because I am weary of the half-truths and compromises that have surrounded this day of age. I have no interest and want no part in the various dogmas and sales pitches that are currently being thrust upon us. I am searching for a reason for being here, an importance that does not come in a pill or a plaque. I am searching for a new beginning for beginnings are free and are open for discovery. But most of all, I am searching for reality, for the full truth with no compromises. With no hiding and no pretending I want to know what is and what is

not, to face it fully. For I am convinced that this is the start of a new age and a new way of thinking. Let the old age die and let there be no mourners.

For all of my life I wanted to know the nature of things, to see them as they really were. And through the course of my studies I had taken philosophy courses, physic courses, and had done much research into understanding what things were and why they reacted the way they did. And the more I learned about the complexities of these various subjects, the more I also realized that there's a simplicity that's holding it all together. And I started to search for this simplicity with great intensity.

It may sound strange, but the simpler ideas are the harder ones to generate and the hardest ones to accept. And it isn't because we enjoy the more complicated theories, but that we are reluctant to give up facts that we believe to be true. For example, it was only 500 years ago when most (not all) people accepted the fact that the Earth was flat. This was only 25 generations ago. And it was accepted as fact

even though it generally didn't make any sense. For example, if we were on an earth that's like a table, what was the table on? Since there were oceans, why didn't all of the water run off? And how did the stars stay in the sky?

But if the people of 25 generations ago had looked closer at the surrounding details, the curvature of the moon as the shadow of the lunar night moved over its face, the movements of the weather, water as it's drained from a round container, they would have had some insight to the spinning of the Earth. But it wasn't obvious, and they didn't want to give up something that was. They did not want to surrender the concepts of up and down. It was tied to their very belief in God; up was towards heaven and down was towards hell. And without knowing it they restricted themselves.

They lived in the world that they had created: flat, limited, and small. They didn't sail on the oceans because they feared they would fall off the edge. It wasn't until they sailed past their

horizons that they found the true size of the world and a whole future unfolded that they never dreamt of.

I am asking the same thing of you. This is an exploratory trip, over the edge perhaps, but honestly trying to look at what is and why.

Where have we limited ourselves? What have we lost over the centuries? As we review the course of history we find that most of the limitations were self-imposed. People were trapped either by customs, attitudes, or uncaring and unfeeling hearts. Unable and unwilling to change their circumstances to the good, they embraced that which was killing them and taught their children to do the same.

Traditions grew up, dictating social behaviors in increasingly regimental order. Superstitions and dogmas replaced individual thoughts. They lived lives of increasing restraint, indeed their lives were filled with increasing compromise for the facts did not support their superstitions and dogmas, and they had to suppress truth rather than admit that they lived

a lie.

These were the circumstances 500 years ago when Columbus directed his ships westward across an uncharted ocean. He sailed against the dogmas and the traditions of his day and started a reawakening, a Renaissance in Europe. A change of viewpoint, of attitude, of heart, where the understanding increased and the very spirit of the people changed. And while we have greater knowledge in this day, we also have greater superstitions and dogmas.

We have the dogmas of the courts, of the banks, of the news and entertainment communities. We have the superstitions of Wall Street, of politics, of the elite. We have complicated our lives to the point where it's impossible to make a living or to secure a heritage. We have robbed the next generation of their futures by regulating their viewpoints out of existence. Drowned in a sea of details, we have lost our own worth. What we need is another reawakening, a Renaissance II, a change resulting from a discovery of our own importance, of who we are and what we are.

This is a discovery of greater treasure and opportunity than anything that was uncovered by the first Renaissance. A future worth having.

What are we substituting for reality? Are we substituting material possessions for character? Are we substituting a business career for love? Are we substituting politics for integrity? And what do we gain when we substitute such? What do we have when we face death?

Have you faced death? Have you considered it to the depths of your heart? No one does until it's your time. And then, sadly, it's too late. Those things, which were the most important, become not important at all and those things that we took for granted becomes the most precious of all.

Before it's too late, how can we find life again? How can we find that part of our lives, which is the most precious? Take the following case, a commander of the Syrian Army. Here was an honorable man, a man of valor, who discovered that he was dying of a horrible skin

disease. All his wealth, all his authority and respect was brought to naught. And in his panic he went searching for a man that, he was told, was a prophet of God. The commander brought great wealth with him and he planned to barter for his health. He didn't expect to get something for nothing. He did expect a ceremony, like the one where two military leaders meet in the battlefield, and the greater one sues the lesser one for peace. And while there's some loss, at least there's life. The wealth and the fame were not as important as right here, right now.

Instead, there was nothing. The prophet didn't want his money, he didn't want to sue for peace, and he didn't even come out to see him. Instead a strange thing happened. The prophet's servant instructed the man that he should take a bath seven times in the river at the base of a nearby lake. Here he had a bad skin disease and this servant told him to take a bath! No pomp, no ceremony, no declarations, no peace treaties, there was nothing the commander had that the prophet wanted; his

life was insignificant.

In his rage he left to go home and that would have been the end of the story except that the commander's servant persuaded him by saying, "Wouldn't you have done a great task if it meant your healing? Why not do a simple task?" Well, he did it and was healed. In fact, he just dipped himself; he didn't even scrub. But he did according to the saying of the man from God, for you see, life is not a barter, it's a gift. That was more than 2800 years ago when Naaman went to see Elisha, but the miracle is still in force. A miracle acted upon and not rejected by disbelief is available for our use today. - II Kings Chapter 5 Christian Bible

This book contains the seven baths and I am asking you to dip consecutively into each one. You would not have gotten this book if you were not searching. And although you may not have Naaman's disease, the lack of worth, the lack of purpose will kill you just as certain as Naaman's disease if it's not cured. As you read the following chapters you have to get actual understanding, not just the "knowing"

of things. You have to get completely in the water, or there's no benefit.

This is a book of seven insights, an entirely new view of the world. Each insight describes a different aspect of ourselves, who we are and what we are. Through these insights we start to see our value, our reasons for existing. This is a new understanding, a complete reassessment of what is important and what is not.

This is a book of seven gifts for we have not been abandoned here in this world and left defenseless. Every species has its gifts that make it unique and provides its strengths. We have our gifts too that are different than any others. We can accomplish our dreams, we can succeed in life. We are important. We do have a purpose.

This is a book of seven healings so we can be made whole. Some of us know the healing that we need, other of us only know that we hurt. We cannot identify our problems; we only know that something is wrong, something

is missing. More than anything else we need healing.

Book 1 Chapter 2: Reality of Physical Space

In order to obtain healing, in order to understand who we are, we first have to understand the physical universe. This is the search for the first insight. We have to change our comprehension of what space is.

Insight #1: All physical objects are made out of space.

What is reality? This is basically a simple question that has a simple answer. This is reality! It is beyond this that we have difficulties in understanding. In order to understand this, we must have a foundation to build upon; something that we can agree defines reality.

To some people, only what we can sense of the physical universe can have the validation of reality. To others it's what we think, pure thoughts that can never be written on paper. Still, for others its feelings expressed through works of art, literature, and music. In truth, all of these exist as reality but none of them is

simply enough to use as a foundation. But there does exist an element common to all three.

What can be more real than reality itself? We can, it seems. For whether we expound that the universe exists within us or that it exists with little regard for us, we are still the ones who ask the question, "What is reality?"

One reality that is universally accepted is called physical space. It is in part what separates us and it is also what joins us together; for we can agree or disagree on various concepts and considerations, but physical space is very real to us. Yet we have never completely understood physical space. What is matter and how does it occupy space? Why do some particles hold a charge while others are not affected by the electrical or magnetic influences? What is light and gravity? It is here that we will start our quest for reality and strangely enough we will do it by building a model of reality, a model built by concepts.

Concepts are the products of our thoughts, the ideas and arrangements that meet with an individual approval. Over the centuries, people have been recording concepts and discarding them, building upon them and then knocking them down, all in an attempt to get a clearer view of reality. And it has always been the simpler concepts that remain. There's a reason for this.

The simpler the concept, the more universal its appeal. This appeal is based upon the obviousness of the observation, its ability to provide fundamental insight. This insight is the key, both in understanding the universe and in understanding ourselves. This insight is the foundation that we'll use to build upon. The simple snap of the fingers is the most powerful force on Earth. In fact it's our very essence. It's more than how we understand things; it's how we change things as well.

And with this approach we can gain a clue to another question that mankind has attempted to answer. How can it be, that although we do not understand how the universe runs, the

universe runs? It is like a machine running off the genius of its inventor, and we, who claim to be the only inventors around, do not understand it.

The Physical Universe:

Matter is the name of all objects that contain shape or somehow occupy space. It affects space by means of affecting the arrangement of matter at other locations. Indeed, it is by this fact alone that we detect matter. For of the various objects that we see around us in everyday life, all of them are composed mostly of space. Matter exists as particles that are almost infinitesimal in size to the objects that they construct. The true size of these particles are unknown, since, of the basic element building blocks the electron, the proton, and the neutron two and possibly all three are not elemental but are themselves composed of other smaller particles.

How small can these particles be? It is possible that these smallest particles do not occupy space at all but only affect it, as a

bump in the fabric of space. To see if this is true, we need to see how matter affects other matter.

The universe has a constant currency of exchange between all objects. This is the exchange of energy. All energy is the same whether it is manifested as mass in matter or as frequency in light. As shown by Quantum Mechanics, all energy is vibrations and all vibrations carry the same weight, the factor h or Planck's constant.

If a particle of mass affects another mass, a transfer of energy accomplishes it. This is the only medium of exchange. This exchange of energy is called a force. However, while there exist only one kind of energy, there exists four known kinds of forces and not every force affects every particle. We have a force that results in the decay of one particle into another, producing a particle of seemingly no mass! There is a wave theory of currents and eddies of electromagnetic fields that use charges to create and dispel its effects. There is an ultra-strong force that exists for very

short distances that keeps atomic nucleus together. And then there's gravity. Gravity is weak but affects all particles, indeed affects space itself according to Einstein's General Theory of Relativity.

Einstein's Theory of Relativity has always been an impasse to understanding the universe because it wasn't obvious. In truth, we are at the same impasse here as our forefathers were 500 years ago, seeing the evidence but reluctant to give up a "given" fact. Our forefathers were reluctant to give up a flat Earth; we are reluctant to give up a flat universe. We like the concept of an empty space where we can place objects and energy fields but, in fact, this concept is quite wrong. There is a unity with everything in the universe; it's all interconnected. One way of looking at the universe is to say that space is the substance and that particles are the boundary to this substance, like air bubbles in the ocean. It's the boundaries that have all of the details, the difference between the substance and the no substance.

Actually, like bubbles that have air within them, a substance different than the water, particles have an inner substance as well. For the insides and the outsides have to be in balance, like the pressure in a bubble, or everything will burst apart. But it's a substance of what?

The Theory of Relativity is based upon a description of a universe where information travels is not instantaneous. Light always travels at a given speed, approximately 186,000 miles per second. At first this doesn't seem very strange until we realize that all motion is a measurement of one object's speed relative to another. But being creatures of the earth we are used to thinking about a ground level, non-moving standard against which all speeds are measured. This ground level is the x,y,z coordinate system that we used to define space.

Instead, light is the standard and all objects behave as if they were stopped with respect to the light, even if they are moving with respect to each other. But how can they be moving

and stopped at the same time? Do you see the error in the thinking? How do you know that the objects are moving with respect to each other? It's only through the light. The only measurement system that we have is the light and it is this light that defines space and time. But how does it define space and time?

It is possible to simplify the theories of physical matter with the introduction of a subspace substance, a space within a space. The interaction of these subspace substances produces the four physical forces listed above. This theory is new and has not been accepted by the scientific community. However it has not been rejected either so you will have to make your own determination.

What is a subspace? A subspace is concentrated space. It is larger on the inside than on the outside. It is different than anything we have seen in the natural universe. And the space where we live is a result of the interactions of these subspaces. We sit between the subspaces on their outward surface where they hit other subspaces. At

each point there is a defined size to the space and that defines this space.

It only takes two subspaces to define a particle of matter. The energy locked inside the matter is the mass. The space defined by the two subspaces is the gravity. The two subspaces are flat and are spinning at a speed in relation to how small they have been pressed. The subspaces smear themselves across the particle due to each others subspace rotation. Thus for a particle the subspace center points make a line and a sphere considering both spins. The inner force of a particle is the magnetic (monopole) force that cannot be seen in physical space. The outer force of a particle is the electrical (charge) force that is seen in physical space.

For a ray of light two subspaces makes a double helix. Here the magnetic and electrical forces are evident in physical space. And while I know that this does not look like it matches Maxwell's equations for light, it actually does as I'll show in the next book.

Two details about this theory will be discussed in the next book. One is the fact that the space is localized around each object, how does the spaces combine to make the universe? How is light affected by gravity? How do two particles interact with electrical and magnetic forces? The second is how particles combined canceling the electrical forces; can space exist without electrical and magnetic pressures?

In this theory all particles that we see around us are made out of equal parts matter and antimatter. The electron that is current thought of as a point particle is, in my thinking, a double size antimatter particle in the center surrounded by two single size particles of matter. And these particles are heavy of the order of 10^{-8} KG in mass. Protons and neutrons are even more complicated. The details and the math will be explained in the next book.

So here's a new view of reality, the physical reality. It's made up of three parts, light, space, and matter. They are all related; they

are all generated by the subspace. In fact, to detect any one requires the other two. The three-fold nature of the physical universe is important and there is a reason for it. But there is more to the universe than just the physical.

Book 1 Chapter 3: Reality of Mental Space

This is the next insight dealing with what we understand. The interaction between objects is the order or disorder that we see in the universe. But it goes deeper than this.

Insight #2: Awareness exists between objects

Is this reality? As I looked over the model presented in the previous chapter and I looked at it for a great many years I knew that the truth of it was missing. It required a perfectly balanced clockwork of light waves that couldn't just "happen." There was something happening below the obvious. The model wasn't simple enough.

In this discussion we have examined the various concepts of physics and combined them in the hopes of obtaining a fundamental insight into physical space. In opposition to our old concept that matter occupies space and contains energy, we now have subspace fields that define the space around particles. This space contains the energy, a virtual light. It

appears that this light is everywhere and is responsible for all phenomenon. But what is this light? This has always been a disturbing question.

Newton pictured light as a stream of small particles. Later, Maxwell thought that light was a wave, like a ripple on a lake of electrical and magnetic fields. Still later, Plank stated that light moves in wave packets whose size and frequency is related to the energy it contains. Einstein's theory of relativity was generated from the fact that the speed of light is constant to all observers, regardless of the speed that they are moving with respect to each other. And I have come up with two subspaces making a double helix whose length is Plank's constant.

To show how important the speed of light is, consider for a moment that the speed of light is infinite. All of the unusual relativistic effects would go away, but so also would the definition of energy. Energy is frequency and any frequency would require an infinite wavelength. And if light is gone, all that is left

is a pure four-dimensional space. But is it?

There is no way to detect this space. Any one infinitesimal spot would have no way of knowing that there was another spot next to it. Space would have gone away.

In order to have a universe we have to have light moving at a constant speed, this creates time. Both time and space are required for each other to exist. This points to a review of space and a changing of a concept.

Space is actually concentrated inside of every subatomic particle. Not only is it concentrated space but its infinite space, the space of a universe within every particle. But we need to go further. The light from the center of a subspace can be represented by a virtual photon, a light whose wavelength is equal to the distance between the center and the side of the subspace. These virtual photons that appear to be moving at the speed of light are actually moving across an infinite distance. From the subspace viewpoint this requires an infinite speed. What is this connection that's

moving at an infinite speed? It's the word "is." Only "is" travels at an infinite speed; that was the reason we had difficulties in understanding Einstein's theory of relativity in the first place.

Do this thought experiment with me for a moment. Let's say that we are standing on top of a mountain overlooking a city, like Pikes Peak overlooking Colorado Springs. I will pick on this city because this is where I wrote this paper. Visually you can see movement in the city although it's far off and everything appears small. But there's a relationship here because everything you see "is" and "is now" and you are relating to it. This is existence.

But then Einstein comes over and says that everything you see "was" and you can't have a "was now." So we feel locked out. This is not existence. But it is existence; it's just taking a while to get to you just as it takes time for you to respond back. This time is critical. It's how you remain you and I remain me. Otherwise we would all have the same existence.

We have never thought of "is" in terms of

traveling in a direction or in terms of speed. We had always said that "is" is. We had never thought of "is" across an infinite space, although it's actually what we expected.

If we look at the model of the electron, we notice that it weighs less than any of the subatomic particle that make it up. This "order" has reduced the overall energy. As with any chemical reaction, energy and order are in balance. But something else has happened as well.

As the electrical forces from the outer subspaces are being covered, the inner magnetic forces are being uncovered. The virtual photons from the outer subspaces affect other particle's light, causing movement, what we call electromagnetic force. The virtual photons from the inner subspaces do not touch the light of the other particles. It does not affect the movements of the other particles. Since it doesn't affect the physical universe, it must affect the mental universe. Indeed, the mental universe is built on top of the physical universe.

This awareness ("Is future - Is past") is a covering between particles, an awareness of order. Increasing order means increasing mental awareness. The detection of motion is improved upon until the ear is formed. The detection of light is improved upon until the eye is formed. But how? People thought that life was an accident, that there were no plans for our lives. But even the most causal observation counteracts this.

Look at the delicate balance that the environment is in. Plants give off oxygen and sugars and receive carbon dioxide. Animals take in oxygen and sugars and produce carbon dioxide. Look at our bodies; the engineering of our hands alone is greater than anything we can understand. That's because the awareness is distributed. Look back at the electron for a moment. It is concentrated "is" and it has three levels of awareness. Each sub-particle has an awareness of "now" and there is a distributed awareness of order, an awareness of what happened in the past and what is going to happen in the future. This is purpose and

understanding.

Now, I agree, how much can an electron know? But the electron can "know" the changes on the gravity that can result in vibration and the distributed awareness of order creating the electron's body. And bodies are made up of other bodies in increasing complexity. Electrons, protons, and neutrons come together to make atoms. Atoms come together to make substances. Each body has a higher complexity of awareness, a higher order. And this is the reason for the complexity of quantum mechanics, of why an electron moving around an atom does not cause radiation loss. It is not because it's wrapped in mystery. Mystery is our worse enemy! It has to be simple, like a snap of the fingers.

The effect of the electron moving around the atom is localized to the atom. That is what is meant by saying that the atom has a body. And I know that I stand alone on this, the rules of quantum mechanics show that the wave nature of an electron is spread around an atom.

But I feel that this is the point. To the electron, it knows that it is moving around the atom. To the atom the electron is part of its makeup, its body of awareness.

If we look again at a single subatomic particle, we see that awareness, "is," is moving at the speed of light from the center of the particle to a point on our physical universe. This awareness is the force that affects other particles and makes the light on the gravity. What would the opposite movement be called? Since its infinite distance and "is" appears directional, we could have awareness moving from the other particles back into the center of this subatomic particle.

How about the word "I"? If "is" is distributed across space how about "I"? "I" is awareness, which is a necessary requirement for life. We had always held that "I" was individual and unique, but then we also thought that for masses of particles. Masses are actually distributed energy which is brighter at the center where time equals now. And at that point we do not only have concentrated "is"

but we have concentrated "I"; "I is". So, on top of increasing order of existence is the awareness of this ordering. And life is not the "I" or the "is" which is static but is the effect of one upon the other. Life is the arrangement of order and the concentration of "I," the ordering of energy and awareness, into one body.

What is life? There's an ordering here that's unique to life. A life is one entity that's made up of many entities. Each of these entities is made up of smaller entities that keep going down to the subatomic particles. And it seems strange when we ask ourselves "How much can an electron know?" when we think that we are mostly electrons, protons, and neutrons.

As I write this my heart is beating, moving blood cells around my body. My blood is carrying food and oxygen to the cells of my body, removing waste to the kidneys, and then circulating back to the lungs for another gasp of breath as they descend back into the body for another trip. They do this so the body might live, but how do they know this? There

is knowledge here.

We have always confused knowing with doing. We say that the cells move around the body because they move around the body. It just happens. But can we say the same thing about a clock? It exists one day because it came into existence? No, we can't say that. We know that a clock required a lot of thought, patience, and experimentation to construct. The only difference is that the order of the clock was put into the clock, that why when something breaks down, we say that it's "out of order." We need to put more order back into it. My order came up from the inside, with the increasing awareness, order, and I-ness of all of the parts. The blood cells do have knowledge of what they are doing. It's knowledge of how they fit into the surrounding order.

Let's go back one more time to the elementary particle model. One particle all by itself has no electromagnetic attraction or repulsion, no interconnection with other particles. Two or more elementary particles have the

interactions mentioned previously but there is also something else. There has to be a purpose behind it. A purpose with understanding, or else there wouldn't have been any matter at all. It would have combined as neutrinos particles and have taken off for parts unknown.

This take us back to the word "is". We use to say the "is" is. But we found that "is" is actually moving at the speed of light. "Is" is existence. And if "is" is a type of light, what about purpose? It's just the direction that "is" is trying to take. It's the definition of life on top of matter. It's another viewpoint.

And what of understanding? Understanding is the awareness of what "is." And more than that, awareness can actually affect the physical universe. Thus the eye does not only detect the light but it is affected by what it sees. The lens contracts, the iris expands, various muscles react to the sensors that are the physical representation of the awareness surrounding the eye. This is purpose; the eye has a reason for being. But there's more.

An eye is an eye and not an ear. Its gets sound vibrations like the ear but it ignores it because it's concentrating on the light. Focus is life. For it's one body whose members concentrate on the various stigmas. And it sounds strange, but we have actually limited our viewpoint here. Look at us. Aren't we all specialized, and are we not part of a larger whole? Don't dismiss this; it's the only way things make sense!

We are all interconnected with every living thing. And it's all life! Plants don't produce oxygen by chance, and we don't produce carbon dioxide by error. The whole world is alive. One life that is divided down into smaller specialization, that's further divided each containing further specialization. Each cell is created, lives its allotted time, then dies; each person, each species. Yet life goes on. It's not random, it's ordered. And the reality of the life is the concepts and the views of reality that each division has. Cells have their view, animals theirs, people theirs. These concepts fit together like the great cycles of nature. The

cycle of water from the ocean, to the sky, to the rain, to the river, back to the oceans again. The cycle of oxygen and carbon dioxide, the cycle of life and death.

For life to exist there has to be understanding and purpose. Every part of the body has a purpose and an understanding of this purpose. Purpose and understanding are built on top of awareness and order. But there's more. On top of purpose and understanding is to know and to will.

So here's another view of reality, the mental universe. It's made up of three parts, each with two sections. There's awareness and order, purpose and understanding, knowing and willing.

Book 1 Chapter 4: Reality of Spiritual Space

The third insight of our existence is a spiritual insight. Every object has depth, a reality within. This is the reality that lights our lives and the lives around us. This is existence itself.

Insight #3: Existence comes from within

Is this reality? It appears to be reality, it has the element of common sense, but it misses the obvious. It has a detached viewpoint of light waves, of bodies of influences, but it hadn't answered the question "What is reality?"

Reality has three sides corresponding to these three chapters. There is the physical universe, the "what" of reality. The actual definition of where things are and when. Then there is the mental universe, the "why" of reality. The interconnection and reaction of the various things as played out on the physical universe. But we are missing a side, the side of "how." What's driving this engine and for what

purpose? How is it sustained?

Look up! Listen! What is it that we see when we look around? What is it that we hear? It's spirit. It's more than just existence it's more than just life. It's the reason we're here. This is the viewpoint of color, of the musical scale, of imaginations and dreams. The smile on a person's lips, the look in the eye, it's all spirit. But there's more to spirit than that. It's how we speak and what we say. The whole language is spirit with the flow of ideas and expressions. Language more than anything else is how we build things, how we define what we are. It gives continuity to our definitions and ideas. And the reason that language is so important, the reason that we see spirit in everything, is because we're spirit.

We have to be; that's the reason we're moving through time. Spirit is a flow. It's not static. Spirit moves between people with ideas, feelings and the whole multitude of existences that we call reality. Spirit is that existence that flows across infinite space to create light, to make matter.

In every atom, in every person, reality comes from within. Reality comes from the spirit, flowing at an infinite speed through an infinite distance. "Is" is defined at every location, connecting everything to everything. It is only one reality, one existence, one plan, working together, existing together.

OK, I've seen it and I know that you have, too. Our existence isn't that orderly. As a being that does not only sense reality but can help create and change reality, my options seem limited. I often have as much control over things as a leaf in a windstorm. Considering everything that is invested in me, I'm not producing a lot of return. In fact, I feel like a light bulb sitting on the shelf. I'm not any good unless I'm connected to power so I can shine. Instead I'm existing in the dark. I need a power source.

Look at the waters. They fall from the sky as drops of rain and water the earth. The excess waters gather together and move downhill. As a stream they have limited force, but as a river nothing stands before it. It's the same with

spirit. Ideas gathered together have more force than a single idea; plans gathered together have more force than a single plan. But it's at the boundaries to these ideas and plans where they collide with other ideas and plans this is where we have conflicts. Reality has its limits it seems. When they conflict with other people's ideas and plans, that's when we start to use force.

What is viewpoint? It's a point where everything seems clear. I can stand on a hill and overlook a town and see everything that's going on in the streets. But I can't look over the next hill. That's another viewpoint. If I stood on a taller hill, I could possibly see both viewpoints. I would have to be on a very tall hill to see all viewpoints based upon a flat earth, of course. I couldn't see what's hidden, only what's out in the open. Now, that viewpoint exists whether I was there to see it or not. If I wasn't there someone else may be up there seeing the overall picture. Hasn't this come up in your thoughts before? That there is someone else? Someone who has the

overall picture?

Here, look at this. I am a person. I have one viewpoint, one life. But I'm made up of many individuals. What are their viewpoints? Same as mine, different aspects of mine. I sense what they sense or what they are telling me. And they perform what I ask. They are all me. I am not sure of everything that they are doing, but I'm assured that they are doing it in my best interest. I take care of my body and try to protect it from harm. I feed it, exercise it, and watch over it. I and the individual cells of it are one.

Does this sound strange? Not when we think that we're spirit, reality in flow. Our viewpoints are together. That is the actual definition of a body. Then if there's someone over us, we must be a part that person's body, part of that person's experiences, giving input and following commands. Well, it's either that or we're slime. That's the stuff that grows on dishes that haven't been washed often enough. It doesn't exist in a body. Every slime cell grows in a colony, but they are not part of a

unit. Each cell grows independently, fighting over resources, each striving to be all it can be. But it is not organized; it's not a body, it's slime. It's just something that has to be cleaned up.

Don't you see that this is the whole reason of why we're here? We are made up of the physical universe, particles of existence that have order and awareness with understanding and purpose, knowing and willing. One builds on top of another, each with greater awareness of what the universe is or can be. But when it came to us, a duality happened. Instead of being the end product of the creation of the universe, we created our own reality separate from the universe. It's the reality of control and consumption. Across those two there is a whole spectrum of livelihoods but none of them has any relationship to why we were created.

In fact, many people have died early because they are either too rigid or too fleshly. These are the walking dead, going through their routines in life without any awareness, without

originality or spontaneity; to all purposes, dead.

What killed them? It's easy to answer. They separated themselves from life, from reality. They took a secondhand reality as fact and it killed them. It's killing all of us. But what is the lie? The lie is in the question, "Is the glass half full or half empty"? The truth is, it's not in the glass at all, it's in God. For God is infinite within just one particle of substance. God is infinite!

OK, I crossed the line. But consider this: What is reality? What do we actually know? Who are we, actually? Consider the national debt. Our nation owes more money than we can pay in a lifetime. But who holds the paper to the debt? How can we pay them back without making our money worthless? And where did the creditors get the money to loan to us? From us?

The truth is that you cannot make a lie, truth. A lie is a lie. There's no reality to it. Most of our laws, our theories, agreements, and

methods are all based on lies. Go back 500 years. Almost all of our current problems date back across this period of history. The economic theories are only a couple of hundred years old. Before this we didn't have a group of individuals trying to control the ebbs and flows of money. You didn't have the constant bombardment of speculation about interest rates and stock dividends. People were too concerned about working for a living.

How about our legislative government, our laws and our courts? Are they not smothering us with details without end? Are they not putting respectability beyond our reach? Placing a class division in this country between the "haves" and the "have nots", the "knows" and the "know nots". The land of opportunity has become a maze of legality and corruption. The great American Dream has become the great American Scheme.

What's happening to us? Strange but true, all of our worst nightmares have come back to haunt us. Actually! Look around! The old Greek Oracles that would look at tree shaking

and then mumble some unintelligent comments are now our political commentators. Traveling salesmen are running for office. The Pharisees practice law in the courtrooms in front of bored aristocrats who are sitting on the bench. The same people who locked Galileo away under house arrest are locking us away. Our cities that were our havens against the predators of the wild are now worse than the forests ever were. Our laws, the definitions of what's right and wrong, have been twisted into a game of opportunity and loss. Our relationships have been broken, our senses overwhelmed by the attention getters that permeate our world. We've lost our liberties to a world-class "permission machine" that is bent on destroying us. Why?

Considering what we are and why we are, why are we acting so stupidly? Because we bought into a lie; instead of knowing, we only know of. We've accepted second hand knowledge as the real thing and we've allowed ourselves to be twisted, dumped on, and massacred. The fact is that we don't know anything at all. And

without knowing, there is no will to change it.

What is the case for the existence of God? By our current level of thinking even you don't exist, but you know you do. You are more than just a collection of atoms, more than just the reaction of your cells. You have a center of existence, a place where it all comes together. You're you. And so is God.

He existed beyond anything else, timeless since he created time, everywhere since he created space. And not only this, but He's here and now. He's our existence and all spirit is from him, all reality is in him. He's organized. He separated creation into three archangels that could be in His very presence. They were the keepers of the Lord's creation. All creation has to do with angels and all angels were God's.

There were those angels that had to do with the powers of God. There were those angels that to do with the words of God. And there were those angels that had to with the things of God, things like a treasury. But iniquity was

found in one. And he tried to be like the most high, to take over, and he fell, taking one third, the last mentioned, with him. Two thirds of the angels were faithful one third went to a place of darkness. And for us this is how everything started. For if everything in creation is three-sided, then it obvious that there's a side missing. That side is being taken up by the Lord's own spirit. That spirit is shining on us as the sun shines on a newly planted garden; shining to produce a crop.

A crop of what? Worship. Every time you enjoy a color, every time you enjoy music, every time you give thanks to God and you appreciate what he's done in your life. Every time you love Him. Every time where you being there has made all of the difference to someone else. Every time you share. That's worship.

You see there is unity to everything in the universe. God is this unity. God is light, God is life, God is love. Everything came from God and everything belongs to God. There are no individualizes here, only relationships. And

it's not a matter of control. I already mentioned about control and consumption. Most churches speak against consumption of any sort and then levy on the controls.

I'm speaking about God who causes the sun to shine and the plants to bloom. About God who wants the best for you and will help you find it. I'm talking about God who is not too busy to be concerned about his creation. I'm talking about God who is active in the daytime and brooding at night, concerned about your very being. I'm talking about the source of your reality, your peace, and your home. I'm talking about what you have been searching for all of your life. I'm talking about God.

You see, we have been living an error all of this time. We have been living in the "what," "why," and "how" entirely. But there's another aspect to us in addition to the physical, mental, and spiritual sides. These are all outward interactions to the world around us. But there is also an inward interaction to God who created us. He's larger than anything he's created and he has more to offer to us. Our joy

can only be found in him. No looking toward the outside world can ever sustain us since we have an inside as well as an outside. We have ignored our insides way too long. And don't let an error creep into the thinking; God is in the insides but we are not God. No more than we can say that we're in the world and we are the universe.

We are instead at that unique point where we can see everything. We are right in the middle of everything. And not only to see everything that goes on but to affect it, to talk to God about it. Everything is played out right here before us.

And, why then, is everything so against us? Why are things so awful? It is because we forgot who we are. We are responsible for keeping things in order. We have no one to blame but ourselves. So how do we correct it? That's the question. For anyone can philosophize, but we want to be able do something that makes a difference. We need to understand what reality is.

There is another universe other than the physical universe, this is the universe within. And there are three major parts to this universe: faith, hope and love. This is our connection to heaven and to hell. For faith can become fear, hope can become despair, and love can become hate. And our insides affect our outsides, our very environment for the whole world is alive, every particle and every light beam. You are the keeper of your world. It is generated from your heart.

But in order to understand we first have to know. And to know we have to see. So the next three chapters are about God as the first three chapters were about us. These three chapters show three sides to God's nature, three sides to His creative powers, three sides to His purpose.

Book 1 Chapter 5: Reality of Faith

How was the universe created? Where did all of this come from? What was the purpose? This is the next insight of how the universe was created.

Insight #4: Creation consists of seven miracles

Reality is based on faith. Without faith no reality would ever exist. Faith gives substance to reality and gives an accounting of it. These are the two faithful witnesses to reality, "the power of God" and "the word of God." Nothing can stand before them. Who can stand against God?

To understand faith, we need to look at the creation of the universe as described by the first chapter of Genesis. This chapter, which describes the "Big Bang" theory in detail, also describes the previous three chapters of this book what, why, and how chapters, only from God's viewpoint.

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. And the earth was without form,

and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep.

Genesis 1:1-2 KJ

This is a description of an empty universe, one where there's no matter, no light, and no space. It's the description that science says that we are heading instead of out of. Imagine the faith required claiming something from nothing. No situation was ever bleaker than this.

And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

Genesis 1:2-5 KJ

Note first that there is "something" called the waters. In many places it's mentioned that the foundation of the earth is in the waters. I've seen the waters once on a spectrum analyzer. It goes by many names, the noise floor, heat,

that border between order and disorder, between energy and entropy. Whatever this division is, the Spirit of God moved across the face of it. And in faith God said "Let there be light," and there was light, and then He acknowledged the light, and at the last He said that it was good.

Notices that there are three representations of the light: the physical (there was light), the mental (acknowledges the light), and the spiritual (it was good). Then notice it didn't all become light, and He separated that which became light from that which didn't become light. God created reality and said "Let reality be," and some of it became reality and some of it didn't. Then lastly note this. God called the light Day and the darkness Night, but what is important is the evening and the morning. God works in the boundaries where there's a definition. That's why matter seems so real.

And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament and divided the waters which were

under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament; and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.
Genesis 1:6-8 KJ

This is the creation of space after light. The W,X,Y,Z axis is the instantaneous light across space on the boundaries of the water. It may sound strange to say that light defines space. Although the light that we see around us isn't described until day four, this is the light of existence. It's the word is, moving at an infinite speed through multi-dimensional space. And there are two sets of lights. The top one defines the space, the bottom one defines the matter through the faith of the next day. And note that there is an area between the two sets of lights called the firmament. It's actually between the matter and the space that it occupies. There's no water in it, which means that it's not opaque, it's clear. That's why there's a one to one relationship between matter and the space that matter occupies. And it's interesting to note that it's called

Heaven. It's the first of a set of Heavens, but it is Heaven. So Heaven must be a place where everything is clear.

And God said, Let the water under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear; and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas: and God said that it was good.

Genesis 1:9-10 KJ

This gathering together of the "is" is the definition of the elementary particle. And it's only one particle. It's been gathered together into one place. It hasn't been separated out into various particles.

And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening

and the morning were the third day.

Genesis 1:11-12 KJ

There are three types of orders here as represented by these plants. The physical order, like the grass, propagates itself. The mental order, like the herb, yields a seed of its self to be planted. It cannot propagate itself; only the matter can be rearranged for the mental order. Finally is the tree yielding fruit, depending upon what type of tree it is. The fruit is taken by the mental and yields up the seed that generates the spiritual order. The better becomes better and the worse becomes worse. This ordering is created prior to any life and comes from the earth, the elementary particles.

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser

light to rule the night: he made the stars also.

And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth. And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

Genesis 1:14-19 KJ

Not only was it the fourth day before we have moving particles that produce light that we see around us, the greater light, there are also the two ordering, with the lesser light that forms the body. And these two rule over and divide the day from the night. In another place it says "Day unto Day utter speech and Night unto Night utters knowledge. There are no languages where their voices are not heard". So the day has to do with the physical universe and the night has to do with the mental universe. And the days are not occurring one after another, but they are occurring simultaneously. Each reality is based upon the reality of the one before. The "is" based upon the previous "is" the "I" based upon the

previous "I."

On day one the "is" and the "I" are inseparable. On day two across space there is one "is" and one "I." On day three the separate "I" appears within each particle with the "is" defining the time and space of the particles. On day four the acceleration effects of a particle are shown in the light it creates. This light, the light that we see with our eyes, is life. The greater light is the energy that all life needs. The lesser light is the ordering and awareness that all life has. And in the same order as "is" and "I" is created over infinite distance and infinite speeds, so is "knowledge" and "purpose," "to know" and "to do". The light that we see is the energy of this world. It is how we know of things and how we affect things. Indeed, these are the two functions that light does. Einstein said that in the statement that nothing goes faster than light that has energy or information.

The speed of light has to do with time. What is time? Everything that has life exists across time. That click of the clock is the flow of life,

our actual existence. But there is more to "here" than we've seen before. These two lights, the one that rules the day and the one that rules the night are set in the firmament of heaven. There wasn't anything in there before; it was just clear. This firmament is where life is located, between the waters. Life is from Heaven. And when you think about it, it actually makes sense. Life has to do with animation, the movement of particles across space. So it would only make sense that life is between the particles and space.

What is the physical light, the one that's described by the electromagnetic field? It's the result of a charged particle that's been accelerated. This acceleration has to do with life. It might be simple enough to say that this acceleration is a wave moving across the firmament that's changing the relationship between the matter and the space that it occupies. And not only that, but it affects the connections between particles, affecting the reality of past, present, and future. This is the lesser light, the interconnection between

things. One relates to the physical universe, one relates to the mental universe. The greater light rules the day and the lesser one rules the night, but there's one more thing of interest. He made the stars also. These are unique sources of light that have existence.

Then God said, "Let the water abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens." So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind. And God saw that it was good. And God blessed them saying "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let the birds multiply on the earth." So the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

Genesis 1:20-23 KJ

Here are the things that we don't see. They are "things," life tied to matter is on day six. This is life not tied to matter, concepts, considerations, and influences, things that we only thought were within us. They are not

only in us, but they are outside as well in the air, in the water, in every particle, around every particle. The environment is alive, the weather, the flow of oxygen and carbon dioxide between plants and animals. It's all life, it's all living.

Most people have never thought this way before. They thought that orders like the amino acids combinations were an accident. But others of us know in our hearts that this type of thinking is outrageous since if you can say "It doesn't make any difference what we do, it's all random" then you can just as easily say "It didn't happen in the first place and it's not happening now." If you cannot define reality, then maybe it's because you don't have one. Now, look at the flip side. Amino acids were planned. Amino acids are alive. How they control the body, how the body works and what it needs, it's all life. The rain falling on the hillside to produce water for the plants and animals, that's life! The air as it moves through the trees, that's life! It's all alive. And within us, haven't you heard the expression

"Don't let love die?" It's literal; love is alive and can die.

In fact, take a walk around most towns. Walk on the stony sidewalk past the graffiti fences and face the cold, dead air. Haven't we tried to kill everything? Haven't we rendered everything and everyone non-effective? And if it's non-effective, if it's non-reactive, haven't we killed it? We made a buck doing it, but we've spent that buck already. What do we have left?

Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth the living creatures according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind"; and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.

Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over

the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." So God created man in His own image; in that image created he him, male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over everything that moves on the earth."

And God said, "See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all of the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food." Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food": and it was so.

Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the mornings were the sixth day.

Genesis 1:24-31 KJ

There is ordering here more than we know, but

the life that has matter is propagated like the life in the waters and the life in the air, each after its own kind. And this life is based on the life of the waters and the life of the air. Plants produce oxygen and sugars. Animals produce carbon dioxides. Everything is interconnected. That should not be surprising. Every day is another degree of knowing and doing. But something different happened with us. We are a three-fold creation based upon the Lord's own image. It was like the end result of the creation process.

The first three days have to do with the physical universe. After these days there was the description of the grass, the herbs, and the fruit trees. Physically, these didn't exist until day 6. But the three-fold description was required for the next three days, the days of life. The physical universe was absolutely static because all movement is the result of life. But before life there had to be a definition of what orders can exist. Then how about us? We must be for the next day. And note that it is only one day since everything

comes together in that day. And also note that we have a three-fold description, a physical side, "he and she," a mental side, "him," and a spiritual side, "man." And before you close this book saying that this is that old sexist material, wait. Don't let the gender throw you. The whole purpose of male / female is more than most people realize.

Thus the heavens and the earth were completed in all their vast array. By the seventh day God had finished the work He had been doing; so on the seventh day he rested from all his works. And God blessed the seventh day and made it holy, because on it he rested from all the work of creating that he had done.

Genesis 2:1-4 KJ

Notice the faith. God rested from his creation, not because he was tired, but in trust. Having built creation, he turned it on and is now responding to it. It has to be such for it's an act of faith because there is another viewpoint. Way back in the beginning I asked the question, "What is reality?" And I answered it

in that same paragraph when I said, "This is reality!" The reality that God created is seven realities all interconnected. It only comes together here. But where's here? Let me show you something amazing.

I, wisdom, live with prudence and I attain knowledge with discretion. The fear of the Lord is hatred of evil. Pride, arrogance and the way of evil and perverted speech I hate. I have good advice and sound wisdom; I have insight, I have strength. By me kings rule, and rulers decree what is just, by me rulers rule, and nobles, all who govern rightly. I love those who love me, and those who seek me diligently find me. Riches and honors are with me, enduring wealth and prosperity. My fruit is better than gold, even find gold, and my yield than choice silver. I walk in the way of righteousness along the paths of justice, endowing with wealth those who love me, and filling their treasuries. The Lord created me as the beginning of his work, the first of his acts of long ago. Ages ago I was set up, at the first, before the beginning of the earth. When

there was no depths I was brought forth. When there were no springs abounding with water. Before the mountains had been shaped, before the hills, I was brought forth. When he had not yet made earth and fields, or the world's first bits of soil.

When he established the heavens, I was there, when he drew a circle on the face of the deep, when he made firm the sky above, when he established the fountains of the deep, when he assigned to the sea its limit, so that the waters might not transgress his commands, when he marked out the foundations of the earth. There I was beside him, like a master worker; and I was daily his delight, rejoicing before him always, rejoicing in his inhabited world and delighting in the human race.

Proverbs 8:12-31 KJ

There is another created from God who is God. It is by this fact alone that everything else was created. It's the duality of viewpoints that gives depth. It was how time started. Otherwise everything would only be "I" and it would be continuous. For space, for time, to

go from now to then, from here to there, requires two. One is a reference for the other. And actually it requires three for there is a constant communication and reference between the two. This is a flow called spirit. Three, yet one, from which all other creation is defined and sustained. You see, we are all from God. And this has always been the point that confused us. We are from God, but we are not God. We have our own viewpoints. We are actually looking back at creation and are trying to understand it. How and why are our constant questions. We are learning but only by doing, by asking. This viewpoint is important because it's how we can understand God, God can understand us, and how we can understand each other. There is a relationship that's needed. But also note this. When light was called forth, part of it became light and part of it stayed dark and then they were divided. It's the same with us. Some of us want peace and some want war. Some wants to give and some want to take. Some wants to heal and some want to injure. Some wants understanding and some wants superstitions

and cults. It may seem strange to know that everyone thinks they're right. The darkness may have stayed dark thinking that it was right, too! The error is using our own judgments. We mislead ourselves.

It's always important to seek wise council, to get another viewpoint. We try doing things as a group to stay away from error, but even groups are misled. How many cults exist around the world? How many thinks that they are right and are doing what is good? Instead, we need to give it a rest. In rock-throwing parties everyone gets hurt. We need to rest as an act of faith. To trust that there is someone over us who can guide us and reward us. Since this has all been carefully planned, then a plan must exist for us. And this plan must have a hope, an expectation of good that is to come. Only with hope can there be life.

Book 1 Chapter 6: Reality of Hope

What do we actually know? What is truth? We have been given a delusion of false knowledge, we have been pretending life. There is a real knowledge and a real existence. This is the next insight.

Insight #5: Real knowledge is from God.

The book of Genesis in chapter 2 introduces another name for God. There is only one God, but the viewpoint is different. It's our viewpoint, "here" with a moving time reference.

When the Lord God made the earth and the heavens and no shrub of the field had yet appeared on the earth and no plant of the field had yet sprung up for the Lord God had not sent rain on the earth and there was no man to work the ground, but streams came up from the earth and watered the whole surface of the ground. The Lord God formed the man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became

a living being.

Genesis 2:5-7 KJ

The time frame is different here. Back in chapter 1 everything had already been created, including all people. Existence here is across all seven realities. It is the Lord God's viewpoint. And he breathed into the first man the breath of life a living being that "realizes" the reality of the seven days of Genesis. A being that not only has the sense of reality but speaks it. A being capable of hope, faith, and love, made by God for fellowship, to understand existence, to work the ground. This is a creation of hope.

There is expectation here. There's a reason for man. He was placed in a garden of every tree that is pleasant for sight and good for food and he was out there to dress it and keep it. Back in chapter five we see that trees were described as an order of things of the spirit. So man was the keeper of everything that was beautiful, that was beneficial, and that was good for him. He wasn't the planter of it, but he was the groundskeeper. He protected it, watered it,

and dressed it.

Now, the following is complicated, but don't leave me. It would be easy to leave with the wrong conclusions since so much has been made of this in the past. But remember this was the beginning. Mistakes were made, but hope goes beyond mistakes. Hope stands firm even when it looks hopeless. Hope expects and faith answers. Faith is the substances of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

Eden, the name of the garden, was divided, as was Adam. There were two trees in the midst of the garden and there were two people named Adam. Now why was this? Truth is, as we look back at creation, everything was created by the act of division. By separating and then letting the two interact. Light with darkness making the morning and the evening. The waters above and below to give the definition of space, the separation of the subspaces to give the light of this world. Existence is between the extremes.

Adam and the Adam that was later called Eve were two different people. But life, existence, authority, and consideration existed in neither one alone but between the two. Likewise, all of the possibilities of their existence were between the two trees, across two definitions of reality. One was the tree of knowledge of good and evil, the other was the tree of life. The tree of knowledge is actually the tree of secondhand information. How would you know good and evil unless you actually did good and evil? How could you pretend to do both when they are mutually exclusive? It's being for and against God! This has to do with the knowledge of viewpoint or looking over at that direction. If you didn't know of it, you wouldn't have done it. It was our protection barrier. The other tree was the tree of life, existence, reality, all things that are life.

We picked from the wrong tree, and we are still picking from the wrong tree. We are trying to get secondhand experiences to substitute for life. All of the books will not substitute for life. Life comes from within.

And what is the response to this secondhand knowledge of good and evil? You either want to control or you want to consume. In truth, you were given permission to do neither since that knowledge was not yours. Someone else with that knowledge had the judgment call. What we were supposed to have was life, but by our own actions we were cut off from it. Having a choice between life and death, we picked death. And, as the saying of this age goes, "You live with your choices."

And Adam couldn't have chopped down the tree of knowledge of good and evil either. That tree was necessary. All of the other trees in the garden except for the tree of life were connected to that tree.

Books are neither a bad thing nor a good thing; they're reference points. They are places to measure your life against. If you had a life without knowledge then all you would be is existence. This is definitely not a good thing. It's where you have knowledge but no life; that's the trap we fell into. You can have all of the knowledge in the world, but it wouldn't

mean anything without life. There are no morals, no goals, no lofty achievements here, nothing that will not be reversed by the next generation. Nothing is absolute without life because it's all presupposed, it's made up.

Take, for example, a butterfly collector. We'll move him into the future where all of the butterflies have been collected and there's none left to fly around. He can see the various forms of butterflies they're in the case. He has to imagine what it was like to see them flying about. There would be different theories, of course, and people would divide themselves into different camps, each with their own perceptions. They would argue and fight with each other and write various papers, but none of this would have anything to do with life; the butterflies are dead.

It's interesting to see the reality here. Life was separated from the knowledge of good and evil. That means two things. One is that life is not burdened with the knowledge that through all of the good efforts of creation, bad was found. The second is that there is no life in the

constant acknowledgment of good and evil. And the two trees were there to give depth to the garden; our life is between these two trees. By eating of that tree, the tree of knowledge, we illuminated a whole realm that we were not supposed to know. And when we spoke to it, we gave it our spirit, our life. When we gave it our life, it had control over our life, to feed or starve our essence, our very soul. To dominate it by either controlling us or giving us control over others thereby giving us conflict and division.

That which was turned off, we turned back on again. And we're still empowering it today. All of the misery around the world, we caused it. We did it. We have no one to blame but ourselves. And there is no answer but one; we have to turn our backs and starve that which is trying to take over our lives. I know it's easy to say and hard to do. We are enchanted with it, we obtain satisfaction by it. But it never lasts. The evil lasts; the hurt, the pain, the hardness seems to go on forever. We say "what if?" But the opportunity is gone.

What's been lost has been lost forever. So what of hope? Hope has not left us.

When you spread out your hands in prayer I will hide my eyes from you; even if you offer many prayers, I will not listen. Your hands are full of blood; wash and make yourselves clean. Take your evil deeds out of my sight! Stop doing wrong, learn to do right! Seek justice, encourage the oppressed, defend the cause of the fatherless, plead the case of the widow. "Come now, let us reason together" says the lord. "Through your sins are like scarlet, they shall be as white as snow, though they are red as crimson, they shall be like wool. If you are willing and obedient, you will eat the best from the land; but if you resist and rebel, you will be devoured by the sword." For the mouth of the Lord has spoken.

Isaiah 1:15-20 KJ

It's our choice, but God can be a part of it. If we stop doing wrong and learn to do right, He's there to guide us. If we wash and make ourselves clean, he'll take away the stain. And then we can have the best that the land can

offer. So there is an answer to life other than reaction. There is another way other than the one laid out before you. What is seemingly impossible is possible to God. There is an answer besides hate. There is a response other than war. The Lord is calling us at this day of age to stop, be quiet, and seek the Lord. But where do we look? Inside, it is deeper inside than out. Inside we can turn to God but we cannot do it with bloodied hands. First we must wash, and we must wash in the waters. Whatever we take into heaven is there for all to see; heaven is clear. Whatever we wash in the waters is removed; water is opaque. Whatever is put into the waters and is left there will never be seen again.

There are three sides to our nature; there is the physical side, the mental side, and the spiritual side. The physical side has awareness but it's only an awareness of the body, the wants and needs of the body. It knows nothing else. Then there is the mental side with its analysis and synthesis processing. It knows the body and it knows the outside world. The degrees

of freedom here are much wider. For some people the purpose of the mind is to serve the body. Others have developed "self-control" and have gone after other goals of greater or lesser importance. Then there is the spiritual side, of color, of music, of love. But this side is often starved as the body or the mind dominates for attention. And, truthfully, in many people the spiritual side has died out altogether. People may go through the motions of living, but life has left them long ago. That is why the young are watched, why twenty and thirty years old dominate in movies. There's still some life left in them.

Can you imagine what life would be like if the spiritual side were not killed but grew to rule the mind? We've never seen a world like that! And note this; the mental side saw a world that the physical side could not see, and because of this the mental had to protect the physical and take care of it. Only the mental knew about the outside world. Well, there's another world that only the spiritual side can see and it's needed to protect the mental. By denying that

world exists, we have left ourselves wide open to attacks and mental starvation.

So how do we move toward life and away from the knowledge of good and evil? Examine your habit patterns. What do you do and why do you do it? Examine your motivations! Is it only for fulfilling desire and securing control? Neither one can be satisfied. Or, can you live with things the way they are? Can you live without the forward look or the raised voice? Are you content with what is yours, or do you want someone else's as well. Can you give of yourselves and what you have? This is entirely different from living under control and consumption. Trying to fill that black hole takes more than we can possibly give.

This world is actually quite simple. God is light, which is to say that God made the world and we didn't exist. God is life, which is to say God made us. God is love, which is to say God works through us. This world isn't about us, it's about God. And all of the pleasures and awareness are for Him; we partake because we

are a part of Him. We're connected to each other through Him. And in everything we do, in everything we say, in everything we enjoy, we should do it with regards to Him and with Him. Give Him glory. Talk about Him, what little bit you know. Don't make it up! For that is the way that many have been deceived and most have been separated from the reality of God's love.

Rejoice! Thank the Lord for all of the good that has happened to you. God inhabits the praises of His people. And know this, as passionate as you are, He is. He loves you that much. Are you thoughtful about things? So is He. If you trust Him, He will not lead you astray. If you have needs, He has plenty. All of the cattle on the hills and the wealth in the ground are His. If you mourn, He can comfort. If you die, He can raise you up again. He knows your every thought and motivation. He has even numbered the hairs on your head. He's greater than you are. Who can stand against Him?

Can we change things? Yes! Change your

mind about God! Trust him, give yourself to him, and love him! And remember this: He's in the insides. No one can come between you. Otherwise, even in the best-intentioned people, religion steps in. In religion you act a certain way, not because the insides are that way, but because other people are watching. There is a measure of control, some places more than others. Control is from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Turn your back on it; it will kill your relationship. How about desires? We all have desires it's how we were made. Desire the things of God.

But as it is written, eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither has entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God. For what man knows the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knows no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is

of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

I Corinthians 2:9-12 KJ

The same spirit that moved on the waters and carried the words "Let there be light" is flowing between you and God. That is the only way that we can be connected to God. And more than that, it's this knowledge that causes us to change, for our desires to change. We become a new creation.

His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness though our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

2 Peter 1:3-8 KJ

The Lord God himself has given us great and precious promises to change us, so we can participate in his divine nature and escape the corruption that we see around us. And he's

given these promises out of his glory and goodness. We didn't do anything to warrant these promises. But we had trapped ourselves and we needed an escape. And this hope is through the knowledge of him; everything that we need for life, for godliness is through this knowledge.

So how do we obtain this knowledge? By walking in the promise, by accepting by faith that there are promises and living accordingly, you gain the knowledge. And with the knowledge you gain more faith to participate in his divine nature. And note that this faith is a two-fold process. If you are going to have faith in God, then you cannot have faith in evil desires. You have to turn away from your desires and turn toward God. That's called repentance. I am writing this to myself as well as to you. For we all have evil desires, and we either act on them or we ignore them. More than anything else we have to accept this change in our nature by faith.

Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ

Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, and be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God through faith. That I might know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; if by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

Philippians 3:8-11 KJ

We know that we live in Him and He in us, because He has given us of His spirit. And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent his Son to be the savior of the world. If anyone acknowledges that Jesus is the Son of God, God lives in him and he in God. And so we know and rely on the love God has for us. God is love. Whoever lives in love, lives in God and God in him. In this way love is made complete among us so that we will have confidence on the day of judgment because in this world we are like Him. There is no fear in

love. But perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment. The one who fears is not made perfect in love. We love because He first loves us.

1 John 4:13-19 KJ

So the next chapter is about love and the spirit of love and the hope that the Lord gave to us. But a word first before we go on. Put the religion on the shelf. I'm not out to change anyone's religion. Naaman continued to perform his duties after his healing. He asked the Lord's pardon and Elisha said, "Go in peace." I'm saying the same thing to you: go in peace. Learn the truth, get healed, and then go your own way. If anyone asks you, tell them what you believe and don't be ashamed, but also don't force your viewpoint on anyone else. That's including your wife, your husband, your children, and your parents. Use the following scripture as a guide on how to act.

For this very reason make every effort to add to your faith, goodness, and to goodness, knowledge, and to knowledge, self-control,

and to self-control, patience, and to patience, godliness, and to godliness, brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness, love. For if these things be in you and abound, they will make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Peter 1:6-8 KJ

For everything that you do weigh it against this. Is it patient? Is it good? Is it kind? Is there a given love? And if you have a question, go to Romans chapter 12. Use this as your guide on how to live.

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

Galation 5:22-24 KJ

Book 1 Chapter 7: Reality of Love

What does our lives consist of? What is the reality of our existence? How can our lives be improved? If we are looking for our lives we must look towards Him.

Insight #6: Our live has to be found in Him.

Love. Love is the ultimate expression of reality. It's how we came to be. It's how we long to be. It's how we'll meet God. For love is God, the very spirit of God toward us. Love is the response to our hope through faith. It's by faith that hopes and love interacts. One hope and the other responds in love. That response, which is given in hope, is in itself responded to by love. Thus, between the two loves grow and so does hope. And through both faiths grows. It takes two. Through the spirit we can have the same relationship to the Son that the Son has to his Father.

In Proverb 8:31 it is stated:

I was beside Him, like a master worker; and I was daily His delight, rejoicing before Him

always, rejoicing in His inhabited world and delighting in the human race.

We are to be the same way to the son; daily his delight. Rejoicing before him always, rejoicing in his creation, because he is delighting in us.

How can we be this way? Through the spirit, for the spirit was given from above to comfort us, to instruct us, to empower us, to keep us. It is how we are known of God. It is how we know God. And this love can only happen on the seventh day; love can happen through peace.

To find the peace of God, you must first enter into His rest. In no other way can you fellowship in God's love. This is that stillness that goes beyond understanding, which convinces the heart and steadies the mind. This is the snap of the fingers insight, reality itself. And it's new; it's the very edge of creation.

Pick up a flower. It's life; it has colors, it has

matter. It's the six days of Genesis. It's been around for hundreds of generations. The fundamental insight, the love, that's new within each one of us. The possibility of new insights exists within all of us. You see, we never understood how important that was before.

Look back at the seven days of Genesis. The first three days can basically be summed up in the words "to be." The next three days can basically be summed up in the word "aware." But the last day is "the rest of God" with the whole week equaling "to be aware of the rest of God." And even though that is the day where everything comes together, the day of the blessing, we started that day by hiding from God and we are still hiding from God. If you are hiding, how can you be His delight? How can you response in faith to God's hope and love? You can't.

Now look at the lie we have been living between ourselves. As faith, hope and love interact, so does fear, despair, and hate. One is in despair and the other responds in hate. That

response, which was given in desperation, is in turn responded to in hate. Thus hate grows and so does despair; through both, fear grows. It's hard to stay neutral. Either faith or fear is working in your life.

Which set would you like working in your life? It's your choice and the individual choices of others around you. No one acts alone. And how do you make the choice? The same way the universe was created, through speaking. We always thought that talking was a form of communication about the states of things. Actually, the state of things came through communication. The words could have either the power of faith or the power of fear.

Over the years this can take its effect, either positive or negative. And more than this, the words that we speak are us. They are our very essence, our spirit, for there is nothing static in this creation. We flow across space and time.

These word that you are reading, this is I, it's where I am. So if I'm a flow, where am I

coming from? The insides, where it's infinitely deep. Where am I going? To you, to your insides. Just like the light going from the infinite center to the infinite center between two particles of matter, except that here it's more complicated as I move matter around and energy to reflect my purposes. We actually flow into each other. But, then, what is death?

Think about what it is to die. Animation in the body stops. The order that the body contains quickly turns to disorder. The mental awareness is discontinued since the ordering is still in the physical universe. Between the matter and the coordinate system lies heaven, so we still exist. But spirit is a flow and we cut our flow off. We know of things, but here there are no things. Maybe we know of money and interests rates, but there's no money here; we've been cut off from the physical universe.

How about pleasures? There's no body, so once again we have been cut off from the physical universe. Instead of being separated into little "I"s across each cell, we've come back together again, just one "I." For

communication, for pleasure there has to be duality!

Our only hope is to have a connection with God. God is light, God is life, and God is love. Without God there are no dimensions. There are no interconnections. He's light. Without God there is no memory, no awareness. He's life. Without God there is no comfort, no peace. He's love. Without a connection, everything else is meaningless. There is only empty and void with darkness on the face of the deep, forever.

How can we be aware of God? How can we be connected? Through the spirit, there's no other way. But the spirit is in everything and flows between God and the Lord. How can the spirit come to us? We are created beings from the first six days facing the seventh day. The Lord, who also has awareness and existence, put Himself into the world. He that was, was. And then he died. He that was, was not. But everything that existed, existed because of the interaction between God and the Lord through the spirit. But God and the Lord separated

from each other. The Lord paid the price of our eating from that tree. It became his fault even though it was our fault. He accepted the death and died and sank into the waters.

The waves of death swirled about me; the torrents of destruction overwhelmed me. The cords of the grave coiled around me; the snares of death confronted me. In my distress I called to the Lord; I called out to my God. From his temple He heard my voice; my cry came to His ears. The earth trembled and quaked, the foundations of the heavens shook; they trembled because He was angry. Smoke rose from His nostrils; consuming fire came from His mouth. Burning coals blazed out of it. He parted the heavens and came down; dark clouds were under His feet. He mounted the cherubim and flew; He soared on the wings of the wind. He made darkness His canopy around Him the dark rain clouds of the sky. Out of the brightness of His presence bolts of lighting blazed forth. The Lord thundered from heaven; the voice of the Most high resounded. He shot arrows and scattered

the enemies, bolts of lighting and routed them. The valleys of the seas were exposed and the foundation of the earth laid bare at the rebuke of the Lord, at the blast of breath from His nostrils. He reached down from on high and took hold of me; He drew me out of deep waters. He rescued me from my powerful enemy, from my foes, who were too strong for me. They confronted me in the day of my disaster, but the Lord was my support. He brought me out into a spacious place; He rescued me because He delighted in me.

2 Samuel 22:5-20 KJ

The spirit that had only previously went across the waters, separated the waters to the very bottom, glorified the Lord, and raised him up to the most high. The Lord died for your sins and was raised for your justification. Now he's with the father and the spirit flows from both of them on to you if you are part of his body. Is he in you and you in him? It's the same way the cell exists in you. Your spirits are combined. If you are not a part of him, then become a part of him. All you have to trade

are your sins for his justification. It's an act of trust and belief. Say it out loud. Say it with the physical, mental, and spiritual realities. Hope is acted upon with faith. And when hope is acted upon, then love is returned. For the spirit is the spirit of love unto us.

But what does it say? "The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart," that is, the word of faith that we are proclaiming: That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved.

Romans 10:8-10 KJ

This is not religion, this is not dogma, and this is faith. The Lord went down into the very depths of the water, which is to say that he was alone. And through the spirit he was changed. He had taken the nature of a man, a being of the seven days of Genesis. But the spiritual required the mental ordering, and the mental required the physical. The heart stopped

beating and the blood stopped flowing. The energy of the blood stopped being passed through the body. The order of the body ceased and disorder started. Awareness faded and reality ended. But the spirit was quickened. Reality. And from reality, awareness, order, life.

Instead of entropy increasing, order increased. Instead of being connected to the fixed energy of this world, energy came from within. The energy came from life and life from the spirit. Freedom. Life.

The Lord ascended to the very height, which is to say he is everywhere, filling all things. His reality is everywhere as is his essence. So there is a separate reality to the one we see here. As there is death and decay, there is also life and healing. As there is want, there is also plenty. As there is despair, there is also joy. There's a whole new Genesis.

After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could count, of all nations, and kindred, and people, and tongues, stood before

the throne, and before the lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; And cried with a loud voice saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb. And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honor, and power and might be onto our God for ever and ever, Amen.

Revelation 7:9-12 KJ

The old Genesis has gone away. The step-by-step ordering that led up to man has gone away because it was established in the waters, and the waters, Satan's realm, is no more. Instead, the only part that is saved is us. And the creation is the blessing, the glory, the wisdom, the thanksgiving, the honor, the power, and the might.

At first glance this looks limiting, but it's just the opposite. It's a larger creation with fewer limitations than the one we are now in. From these seven everything else happens. And it's

all the good things. We can't even think this way. We identify good things as shelter to protect against the loss of heat, food to protect against hunger, money to protect against poverty. Our definition of is all about limiting the loss. In the new Genesis it's all gain with no losses and it all revolves around the lamb, the one who died for us, and the one who lives for us. And it's just around the corner. That's hope!

And it's important to understand that we're in this. We are going to be judged by every word that we say. Why? Because that's who we are. We are the words. Are you speaking the new Genesis? Are you speaking blessings, glory, wisdom, thanksgivings, honors, powers, and might? That's the part that kept of you.

For example, you see someone stranded on the highway miles from town and you give that person a lift. That's kept in the next creation. You drive by, that's not. You encourage someone and he gains some wisdom and peace that's kept. Both are speaking even the movement of our bodies is speaking that's how

the spirit works. If these things are not spoken then, they are not there to be used. If you don't have these things in you then, there is nothing of you to use in the next universe. You won't have any part of the next life. If you only give a little, then you only have a limited part of the next life.

Remember this: everything is directed at the Lord. He has to be in everything that you do: in your loves, your honors, your achievements, everything, he has to be the center of it, or it's of no effect. Are you given honors? Give them to God, and he will honor you back in private. Do you seek wisdom? Ask it of God. Of all of these give the credit to God and don't seek any glory of your own. Surrender all to God and then wait, giving blessings and thanksgivings before the Lord, rejoicing and delighting in Him. Be real before the Lord and he will open his new creation to you so you can have a part in it. There has to be a connection. This is where the victory is. And remember there is someone who will work with you to develop your faith, to provide love

for your hope and hope for your love. To work with you if no one else will. The Lord himself.

He will work with you to change your situation, to change others' situations if it's done in hope and love. Nothing is impossible. The Lord has already broken the rules when he reversed entropy and created energy. And remember this, imagine how big the universe is; He's bigger. He's the newest of creation. When he says "Behold," everything changes. He's our peace, a peace that's stronger than our understanding that establishes the heart and mind so they cannot be shaken. He's the one who saves us so we never have to face death. And all of this we can have through faith, through the Spirit of God. For the Spirit was provided by the love of God so we can have Hope. And through the spirit we may have access to God, even the deep things of God. For it is not of works, the things that we do of and by ourselves, but only is relation to God.

What is your theme? What is your story? For we write our lives in the living and in the

dreaming. Study the word, study the Lord's creation, study what's true and leave the false behind. For the Lord has placed truth in front of you so you may understand. All things are manifestations of the spirit. And they are the results of the faith, hope, love of the Father and the Son.

Our lives should flow as music, for each note has a theme or spiritual expression and the notes together have a separate spiritual expression. They are related, but the sum is more than the parts. The same is true within each of us. Each expression is unique. Together they make an expression of which we are. We have an endless flow of thoughts.

Some of these thoughts we have spoken and have taken to heart. These are spiritual expressions. They make us who we are; this is another expression. We join together with other people in some endeavor. This is another expression. Each grouping is another flow of the spirit. But the spirit only flows if there's hope, faith, and love. This is the point where we lost it as a nation. Through these three

working with the Lord we can make our own environment, our own personality, our own opportunity. It's not random, it's not luck. It's spirit.

Now look at how we are living. This is the same confusion that we made with our speaking. Instead of speaking hope, faith, and love, we were just talking about what we saw or heard, not realizing that we were speaking fear, despair, and hate. It seems odd that we were living this way. We turned everything against ourselves and then wondered why God made everything against us. He didn't, we did. He's simply responding to us. In fact, in many cases he's not responding to us; He's simply trying to keep us from getting hurt. That's why He's hiding his eyes from you, why he's not listening, for your sake. Everything he does is for your sake. Finally, the morning light is starting to come into this darken world. He loves you.

This world is a much simpler place then we give it credit, and much richer. Before people knew about fire they lived in the cold. And

when they had fire they had burns until they learned how to use it. We're getting burnt because we are not following the instructions, the one provided by the Lord himself. We need to see the world as he sees it, knowing that our existence is in Him.

It's time to sing a new song, a song of love and joy. It's time to sing a new song, a song of life. Of liberty, and mercies, and joy throughout your life. Of knowing where you fit in, of simplicity, of doing things that's right. It's time to set aside our grieves and go to God tonight.

Book 1 Chapter 8: Reality of Choice

Ultimately reality comes down to this. You have to make a choice, you have to choose God.

Insight #7: You have to make a choice

There are two realities set before you in this day. One is the reality of an old age ending and one is the reality of a new beginning. One is based on fear and the other on faith. One has only desperation and hate. The other has a giving love and an expecting hope. One has to do with closures; the other has to do with openings. It seems strange seeing these side by side like this, but it was done so you could pick your reality, your future, now, before they are separated; one for eternal life and one for eternal death.

Many of us know the reality of death and dust, of broken dreams, of hopelessness, of being trapped. Now let me show you another reality, the one God has for you today.

And Jesus departed from there, and came to

the Sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus's feet; and he healed them. Insomuch that the multitude gasped, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see, and they glorified the God of Israel.

Then Jesus called his disciples to him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days and have nothing to eat; I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

And his disciples said unto him, Where should we find so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

And Jesus said to them, How many loaves have you?

And they said, Seven and a few little fishes.

And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground. And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and broke them, and gave them to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up the broken meat that was left; seven baskets full.

And they that did eat were four thousand men, besides women and children. And he sent away the multitude, took ship, and came into the coast of Magdala.

Matthew 15:29-39 KJ

Go to the Lord on the mountaintop. Go to Him for your healing. Go to Him so you'll no longer be dumb but will know what to speak. Go to Him so you'll no longer be incomplete but will be made whole. Go to Him so you'll no longer be hesitant but will walk in the grace of the Lord. Go to Him so you will no longer be blind to the love God has for you. Go to Him so he can have compassion on you. He will fill your life from what little you have and all will take notice. The world is constantly trying to rob from you, but God will provide

for you and will give you plenty.

In this day the Lord will make of you an example. If you give yourself fully to Him and love Him and will go to Him, He will bless you. He will heal you, strengthen you, feed you in the midst of a nation that's falling apart; for all of the old devices of man are coming to closure. And others will look at you and wonder and will be driven to jealousy by what they see. And they will come after you. But be established in this one fact. Their ending is coming, but your beginning is just around the corner.

There is only one reality, God. There is only one existence from which all other existences are based. And you either believe in Him, or you don't. But this world is a good example of what can happen when you turn on God and leave. That's what the devil did to his own end and demise. Cutting himself off from life, he became a liar, robber, and accuser. Unable to make anything of his own, he prevented anyone else from having anything. He rewards people but only with unhappiness; he

provides sickness and poverty to all that will ask for it. He crowns people with the mantle of death taken them off to a place of torment and unrest. And when he gets thrown into that lake of fire, that instant that will last forever, that will be his utter destruction, those people who are his will get to come too!

What is life? What is reality? It's knowing God and His will for your life! And it helps to know what He thinks of things. And it depends upon the reality that you pick. You make the choice.

God will render to every man according to his deeds: To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life: But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that does evil.

Romans 2:6-9 KJ

If you pick the reality of "patient continuance in well doing" then you are living the life of

faith that will lead to eternal life.

For there is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written the just shall live by faith.

Romans 1:17 KJ

But if you only follow your own way read the following:

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness. Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath showed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse. Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish hearts was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like

to corruptible man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things. Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen

For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections. For even their women did change the natural use unto that which is against nature. And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of woman, burned in their lust one towards another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves recompense of their errors.

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient: Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affections,

implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

Romans 1:18-32 KJ

This should hurt. All of the problems of the 20th Century are listed here. And all of these things will kill you; they are a product of a reprobate mind, one that's gone against God. And this is not finger-pointing; everyone in the world is on this list, everyone who did not glorify the Lord or were thankful toward him. Look at this list again and check yourself against it. And look at our industries and education systems. How much of it is based upon the things listed here? Because we serve the world, in fact worship the world and not God we have been given over to vile affections. We don't even know how to be decent with each other anymore. And then we start lusting in everything and in every way.

And don't look at this simply as gay bashing. There is no room for hate in the gospel of Jesus although many "self-proclaimed"

ministers have made it a hate religion. Everyone has problems including Paul and myself. Instead remember that sex has to do with the body not with the spirit. But lust has to do with the soul, that point where the body and the spirit overlap and affects each other. And the soul, the individual, is where choices are made.

Go to a sports game, go to a business meeting, go to a courtroom, and go to a classroom. What you're looking at, through all of the self-pride and controlling manipulations, is lust, pure and simple. Our whole country is based on it. Our entertainment community depends upon it. Control and consumption; it's all self-directed, and it made everything listed below.

Unrighteousness:

Against what's right and just

Fornification:

Sexual conduct outside of marriage

Wickedness:

Planning evil, viciousness

Covetousness:

Desiring wealth or possessions, greed

Maliciousness:

Done with spite, grudge, ill will

Envy:

Resenting another's advantage

Murder:

To kill, slaughter, tease, torment

Debate:

To contend, argue, fight, picket

Deceit:

To mislead, trick, ensnare, cheat

Malignity:

Malcontent, extreme violence

Whispers:

Gossip, Rumor, Derogatory reports

Backbiters:

To slander, to attack someone absent

Haters of God:

Detest, loathing towards God

Despiteful:

Expressing malice or hate

Proud:

Arrogant, vain, overbearing,

Boasters:

To brag or crow, expressing pride

Inventor of evil things:

Making or finding evil, evil results

Disobedient to parents:

Against one's parents, to cause grief

Without understanding:

Void of comprehension, discernment

Covenant breakers:

Breaking a pledge, against your word

Without affections:

Without love, feeling, or disposition

Implacable:

Not capable of being pacified,

Unmerciful:

Without mercy, excessive

If you are reaching for an excuse, don't. We can justify anything. The question is can God

justify us? Are we worth the expense? Study this list. By being against God, we affected ourselves. Show me anything on the list that's positive. No, this is a list of losers. Why associate with anyone on this list? The problem is, once you're here you can't get out. Once darkness chooses to stay dark it can't change its mind and decide to become light again. The darkness cannot comprehend the light nor can it stop it. All it can do is to run from the light and stay in the dark.

But God commendeth his love towards us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement!

Romans 5:8-11 KJ

For if by one man's offense death reigned by one, much more they which received

abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ. Therefore as by the offense of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation, even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

Romans 5:17-18 KJ

Thank you, Lord. Thank you, thank you. For I was on that list; I was an enemy of God and Christ died for me, to reconcile me to God. And then He was raised so I could be saved by his life. Now I can live faith to faith toward eternal life. But even more than that, my mind can be renewed through the atonement of Jesus Christ. I don't have to go back to this list anymore. I can find real satisfaction, real joy, and real peace in God through our Lord Jesus Christ.

Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are

alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

Romans 5:12-13 KJ

Examine your life constantly, for there are forces that will continue to pull both ways in your life. There are forces both ways in everyone's life. And you either yield to unrighteousness, or you yield to God. It's a constant choice. Listen to your conscience. Examine your heart. And don't allow anyone else to tell you what's right or wrong. It has to come from the inside, from a fellowship with the Lord, from an examination of His life through the four Gospels. It has to come from honesty.

People have been controlling and destroying other people's lives for ages. How many people have been burned at the stake because they thought differently on some issues? How many parents have sold their children into marriages of hatred and grief? How many people have robbed from the poor for their own selfish ends? How many people have set themselves up to be equal with God leading

nations astray? The end of these people will be bitter, indeed, for they will have to give an accounting of their actions to God.

What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to god, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Romans 6:21-23 KJ

Don't stagger at this, but believe it. God is able to do this. For He sent His Son down and paid the ransom for you so you won't be lost. You're needed in the next life. What is it that you have here that you trade for eternity? You know that the days are short. What is so important to lose everything? Look at this in reality. Is it so hard to worship the Lord? He made you and knows everything about you. Trust Him and begin your life.

The error was made back with Adam. Adam

was made in God's own image, and then he sinned. How could he be in God's image if he sinned? God cannot sin, how can God be against himself? So God came to earth born as a man and He died on a tree accused of our trespasses. He did that for us. He who could not sin took our sins and died so we could still claim to be in God's own image. Then He was changed from a living soul to a quickened spirit so our image could also change, so we could be changed from sin to everlasting life. He did this for everyone because He wants all to be saved.

But He won't command it; He won't force you to be changed. He wants you to choose life, to want to love him. It's simply up to you. You either going to choose faith or you will choose something else. Naaman, after his healing, recognized that there were no other gods other than the one in Israel. And because of that he would no longer sacrifice to any other god than the Lord.

How many gods do we sacrifice to? Do we sacrifice to greed? Do we sacrifice to anger?

Is our company an idol? Do we seduce people with pleasant sayings and pretty pictures? Do we lie? Do we steal? One tenth of the field's output belongs to the poor. Do we harvest everything? How about your factory's output? Do we only cater to the rich? The Lord is not a respecter of persons you shouldn't be one. Are we inventors of evil things? Are we proud? Do we boast? Do we argue? All of these are spirits. Each one is an individual entity. Don't sacrifice to them. Just walk in faith trusting God, giving to God what's His.

This is not about dropping out of society and starting to live as a hermit in some cave. This is not about joining some religious order where they control every facet of your life. This is not about torturing yourself until life is not worth living and a smile never cracks across your lips. And this is not about carrying signs in public denouncing this or that, being forward to people and argumentative. This is about being real, knowing there's a Lord and acting accordingly. Look at things the way He looks at things. Act the way He wants you to

act. Use the following scripture as a guide.

Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him and saying, Master, which is the greatest commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first great commandment. And the second is like unto it. Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all of the laws and the prophets.

Matthew 22:35-40 KJ

And as a warning I'll give the following: There was a rich man who could have been famous, he could have been a judge or a politician. He no doubt was honored by all who met him and was given the chief seat at all of the society benefits. He may have even been quoted in the papers. And this is what the Lord saw looking down from heaven.

There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there was a

certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

Luke 16:19-21 KJ

Notice who the Lord knew by name. Even though the rich man had everything and the poor man had nothing and he was sick and he was hungry and he was tormented, the Lord knew the second by name and not the first. The Lords looks at the heart of a person, not the circumstances.

And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died and was buried.

Luke 16:22 KJ

There may have been a gap here of generations but the rich man also died. All of the events of his life the Lord made no mention of. It was not important. Instead of being carried by the angels, he was just buried. That's all society

can do for you. But there's more to the rich man's story.

And in hell he lifted up his eyes and seethe Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in these flames.

But Abraham said Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivest thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted and thou are tormented. And beside all this between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot, neither can they pass to us, that would come from hence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house. For I have five brethren, that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he

said Nay father Abraham, but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead.

Luke 16:23-31 KJ

Jesus was raised from the dead; will you hear Him? Change your ways. Give your heart to the Lord and let Him guide your life. It's not too late, not as long as there is air in your lungs. Ask Him to forgive your sins and you forgive anyone who has sinned against you. Place everything that you have on the Lord and Him alone. Trust Him and call him Lord. Be one of His people. The days are shortening quickly now. The Lord promised that the days would be shortened and they are. It's not an illusion that time is speeding up.

Walk the walk of faith, trusting God. Be part of His body. Do what He asks you to do. And enter into His peace. And always compare it against the Bible, against what Jesus said, for He has never changed His viewpoint and He

never will.

Don't be forward, be meek. Don't go in anger, go in love. Don't be the avenger, be the peace maker. Don't take the law into your own hands, but give due to all in authority. Don't take advantage, but be merciful. Don't go after your rights, but go after someone else's rights. Comfort each other and carry each other burdens as you can. Don't be a rich man in a society that hungers. Don't be the lawyer that tempts the Lord. Don't be like Adam who went against the Lord. Life is calling and it's a time for new beginning. For beginnings are always free and open for discoveries.

Book 1 Chapter 9: Reality of a New Beginning

This is your time, for this beginning has to start with you. If you want to make a difference, you have to be different. If you want to be different, you have to think differently. The reality of these insights has to be inside of you, revealed to you. This is where reality starts. Look at these seven insights, for these are seven truths of your own existence.

The first truth is the truth of your identity. You think that you are here, single points of existence in the corner of the universe. Nothing is important except you. But you cannot detach yourself from the universe; you are a part of it. The way you interact with people around you, this is you. In everything you do, in everything you say, that is who you are. It's not in your thoughts, you are not who you think you are. But you are what you dwell on. Your innermost secrets are expressed to the world through your actions. You cannot separate the insides and the outsides.

The second truth is the truth of your awareness. Your awareness exists in your interactions with others. The more we interact, the more we are aware. How do we affect each other? What do we think of each other? When we isolate ourselves from each other, we become hardened. We don't even feel the consequence of our actions. We are not aware of how others feel.

Think about this example. You're up in a hot air balloon at night over darkened country. You have a flashlight, but you're too high for your flashlight to give you enough light to see anything. You are still in the dark. If you land on the ground you could see the area lit by your flashlight. If there are other people around with their flashlights the whole landscape is lit up. This is our awareness. It's not what we see on television, it's not what been forced on us from others. It's the reflections of our own existence and the existences of those around us.

The third truth is the truth of this existence; existence comes from within. Existence is a

flow that lights our lives and our thoughts. It is our very essence. If it stops, existence stops. It's the very breath of God upon our lives. Its reality, moving at an infinite speed across the infinite distance of our depths. We are wonderfully and fearfully made.

We are the current phase of the universe creation. We define the universe around us; it's the results of our actions, of our words, and of our faith. The vision that we have of the universe around us becomes the universe around us. The greater the vision, the greater the universe. This is more than just interpretation, its reality itself.

The fourth truth is the truth about everything we see. Creation consists of seven miracles, seven acts of God. Reality came into existence through these seven miracles, the seven days of Genesis Chapter 1. If we are to live in reality, we must heed the reality of what God has created.

Day 1: All must be equal.

Day 2: All must be separate.

Day 3: All must be unique.

Day 4: All must be plenteous.

Day 5: All must be connected.

Day 6: All must be under authority.

Day 7: All must be at peace.

The fifth is the truth about knowledge, about what we know. There is a knowledge that we speak, but it's empty. It is only second hand knowledge. Real knowledge is from God. This is knowledge that once it's given it can never be shaken. This is revelation knowledge. This is knowledge that you know that you know. It's your very foundation. This is knowledge that can inspire, that can motivate, and that can clarify. It's different than the knowledge of this world. It can change your life and the lives around you.

The sixth truth is that our lives can only be found in Him. Once we stop trying to live our

own lives but live as a part of Him, in Him, then our lives start to have meaning. This is how we have victory, through this joining of our lives. This is how we gain the seven fruits of the Spirit: love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance. Can you imagine how different our country would be if we all had these attributes? Can you imagine how much we would have if we didn't continue to fight over it? We have destroyed more blessings because of selfishness, bitterness, and pride than we could count in a lifetime. It's time to let go of these things and to live for God.

The seventh truth is the most important one of all; it's our choice. We either accept Christ in our lives or we don't. We either accept the Anointing, or we don't. We either accept the Holy Spirit, or we don't. It's our choice. But what we are searching for is here whether we know it or not. This is where fulfillment is, this is where our joy lives, and this is where we find peace.

In order for our lives to change we must enter

into the Holy Land. We must find the peace of God. Only then will the Excellency of his holiness fill the temple.

And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart, And was transfigured before them: and His face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elisha talking with Him.

Matthew 17:1-3 KJ

Only after we have entered into the peace of God can the present of the Lord be strong in our lives. In a mountain set apart, in the peace of the seventh day, can we know the deliverance from captivity and the renewing of dedication toward God, where the presence of our Lord lights our lives with His holiness. You must surrender to peace.

There are seven gifts that the Lord has for his body, seven healings that you can accept. And he gives these to you not only for your benefit, but so you can make a difference to the ones

you contact, so you can make a difference to the world.

Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon Him, and a voice came from heaven, which said. "Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased."

Luke 3:21-22 KJ

It is important to understand that this action was performed in unity between the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Because it is by this act that everything else takes place. Jesus waited for this moment more than 30 years of his life. There were no healings or miracles before this event, but there were many miracles after. And this didn't change who Jesus was; he was always the Lord, the first born from God. This has to do with faith, hope, and love. About God working together towards one purpose. This purpose was mentioned in the book of Isaiah. It's the very essence of the gospel, of the good news for us.

And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; And shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord: and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears. But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked.

Isaiah 11:2-4 KJ

The anointing of the Holy Spirit is described here as seven spirits, seven gifts. And they are divided, as the universe is divided, into the words of God, into the powers of God, into that spiritual part that the Lord wants us to grow into. That third part is missing if we don't respond to the Lord.

The spirit of wisdom and understanding is given by the words of God. It's one of the three pillars of existence. It's more than

having wise knowledge and an understanding of how things work. This is essence; it's everywhere and in everything. The easiest way to say this is it's to and from on a conceptual level. For every event, for every possibility, it's what did happen and what will happen. For all principles, principalities, virtues, everything that's an angel, it's the result of every action, the consequences.

The spirit of counsel and might is another pillar of the power of God. Might means strength, power while counsel means responsibility, authority, and governing. Its action and response, it's what can happen and what is happening on a physical level. And it's working hand in hand with the spirit of wisdom and understanding. In every event both are present. But there's a third that is missing from many people's lives, the spirit of knowledge and fear. This knowledge is knowledge from God, revelation knowledge. And the fear is the respect of whom the Lord is, the beginning of wisdom. This pillar was put in place when Jesus paid the price of our

sins and accepted us into his body. When this pillar is evident in all things then the universe will be placed right again. But note this; we are the pillar of the Lord's construction. We must walk in this spirit of knowledge and fear constantly. This is our part of the universe, the best part. To have knowledge from God and respect of whom God actually is.

Lastly there is the spirit of the Lord which is how the universe functions, through Him. He is our Lord and we are His people. This is the absolute truth of existence. And with this Anointing Jesus affected His generation, the gifts changed everyone whom He contacted, everyone who had faith. And He returned to the Father so He could send the Holy Spirit, the Comforter, to us. He did this so the Anointing could spread to His body. God did not come to earth to set up a religious organization; He came so we could have life. He didn't come to judge us but to heal us. A body cannot live unless it has life passing through it. In the physical the life is in the blood, but in the spiritual the life is in the

Spirit. Listen to the words of Jesus.

Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me: or else believe me for the very works sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you. He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. If you love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray to the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world can not receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him; but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world seeth Me no more; but ye see Me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in Me, and I in you.

John 14:11-20 KJ

And the evidence of the Spirit is the gift of the Spirit. The healings that are provided across the body. Everything that you need is here. If you need knowledge, it's here. If you need wisdom, discernment, it's here. If you need healing, it's here. If you need a miracle in your life, it's here, only believe.

Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same spirit. And there are difference of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestations of the Spirit is given to every man to profit with all. For one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit. To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; to another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues. But all these worketh that one and the self same Spirit, dividing to everyman severally as He will.

1 Corinthian 12:4-11 KJ

This is the time of the future, the time that has been spoken about in times past. This is a new era, one with a new meaning. We have a purpose, we have a value. We are His. There are seven healings that we need as a people. These are the needs of health, wealth, love, safety, achievements, clarity of mind and clarity of purpose. If we want peace in our land, if we want to turn life around, we need to insure that these seven elements exist in every person's life. We cannot force these on people but neither can we turn our backs and pretend that they don't matter. Remember whatever you do to the least of these you do unto God.

Whatever you do in your in powers will not achieve much. You are limited in what you can do. But what you accomplish through God's plan of faith, hope, and love can achieve much. No devil can stand before the Lord. Use the gifts. I know that it doesn't make sense in the intellect, but this goes beyond the intellect. This is in the spirit. But you have to fight for it. You have to read this book more

than once for the realization to hit, for revelation to come. This is the turning point. This is the anointing that makes the difference.

For years I had missed the reality of this because I had this in my intellect and had thought that was enough. Then one day the Spirit came upon me with the music of the carousel from a movie of the same name. And all at once I understood there are two realities working in our lives; the reality of this world, where force makes the difference, and the kingdom of heaven, where Spirit makes the difference. One is trying to destroy you and the other is lifting you up. One is based upon the survival of the fittest; the other is based on mercy. One is trying to destitute people, the other is trying to enrich. Daily both sides are fighting over you. All of your pain came from this world and the actions that you took in fear because of it. All of your good fortunes came from the Lord and the actions that you took in faith because of Him. This is the dividing line. This is reality.

Here is a reality of a new beginning, one

containing a new purpose. For God has not created all of this just for the sake of the bankers, so the politicians can spin another yarn, for the military men to blow up something else. There's a purpose to reality and that purpose is you. But first you must be made real; you must be given a new heart. Now you are like Pinocchio, animated, able to talk but not able to feel, not as a real person. Easily led astray by whatever fancies you, you entertain it and then it enslaves you. Trapped by your own grieves you are led into slavery. Owned by the landlords, pressured by the police in a land that was once democratic but has now turned cannibalistic as we feed off of one another's losses and despairs. Unable to achieve any real accomplishments, we have tried to escape into movies and books, remembering when it was important to be human.

"Nothing is important" we are told as we watch the con artists and fast talkers parade before us. In their pride and arrogance they mock God and His plans. They say that there

is no God, that there are no plans, and that we have no hope for tomorrow. Trust them, they say, and they will lead us to safety. Take flood insurance in case of rising waters and fire insurance in case of flames. But what good are these if you are drowned or burned alive? They are leading you into a land of dust, into starvation and death. Don't follow them, for their lies are compounding upon them and their confusion are showing on their faces. These are the goats that lead the lambs to their slaughters. Pied Pipers of death, they make the rounds of merriment to see whom they can entrap. Get away from them. The world has not changed and neither has God. You know the Ten Commandments follow them!

Have no other gods than the Lord thy God.

Do not make any graven image or any likeness of anything and bow down to them or serve them.

Do not take the name of the Lord in vain.

Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it holy.

Honor the father and mother.

Don't kill

Don't commit adultery

Don't steal

Don't bear false witness

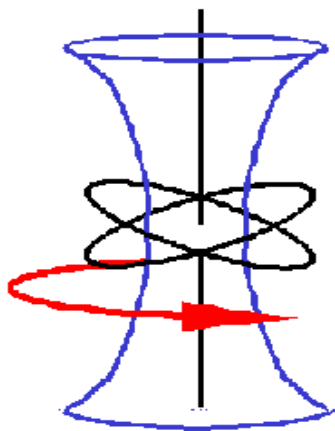
Don't covet thy neighbor's house, wife, servants, ox, ass, or anything that is your neighbor's.

Exodus Chapter 20 KJ

We are God's in all that we say and do. Trust Him before its too late, before the end comes. You have a purpose, trust God to fulfill it. God can do a miracle with what's left of your hopes and dreams. Expect a miracle in your life. Don't trust in yourself. Trust in Him. For this age is quickly ending and the next age is fearsome to behold. Now, while it's still today, you need to make a commitment. You need to take a stand. For I present to you here two realities: life and death. Pick life and live forevermore.

Physics Revisited

The Geometry of Subspace



Forward to Book 2: Physics Revisited - The Geometry of Subspace

From the Book “Theory of Ubiquity”

This was the first book in a series called "The Theory of Ubiquity; Insights for the 21st Century" that I generated in 2008. It took the general insight given in the Renaissance II book and makes a case for a new proto-science to explain the physical universe. There are two other books in this series which uses this proto-science to explain life, and the spiritual universe. And I tried to explain these realities in a very straight forward manner without any mystery, hocus pocus, or supernatural intervention.

This book is concerning the science of Physics. It reconnects the various pieces of insights on Quantum Mechanics, Relativity, gravity, Electromagnetic, and Nuclear Physics back into a meaningful picture; one where you can snap your finger and say “Of course! It all makes sense!” Due to the limitation on bandwidth the e-book epub version will be

without diagrams. The hard book and pdf versions will retain all of the pictures and diagrams.

I have been searching for the key to understanding physics all of my adult life; the key that would unlock the mysteries of the Universe and would make everything simple. This was more than the combination of the four known forces into a grand Unified Field Theory. It was trying to gain a deep understanding of the nature of space and matter. Why some particles have a charge while others did not. Why did gravity only attracts. And what is anti-matter and dark matter? Except for a few people on the Internet I felt quite alone. Most people only cared for the what, not the why, and if they could use an equation then they were quite satisfied. Truthfully, I even have trouble with $F=MA$. How did the mass know to accelerate under the influence of a force? What I was looking for was to get beyond the mathematics.

Now physics has mathematics of a greater

degree than any other occupation on Earth and this math is important. It is needed to make the physics useful. But physics also has a sense of wonder. And it is this wonder, the ability to open our minds to new ideas that has captured my interest. I wanted to see the new horizons. I want to know why things were the way they were. And I wanted to know what was true and what was not true. But I also found out that sometimes the thing that you were most sure of turns out to be false and you are forced into a reevaluation. And once you gained a new insight there is no going back. Things will never be the same again.

Painfully I have to admit that I never saw this as a problem. I just went on in perfect innocence, not seeing the damage I was causing other people on the internet. This is worse than criticizing someone's religion, which no one should ever do. It's personal. It turns out that the ground beneath our feet is even more personal. It will change our views of ourselves and it will change our future and our children's future.

I have been on this quest for 38 years starting March 1970. At times there have been blinding revelations that left me stunned for weeks at a time. At other times there was the finding of the obvious puzzle pieces known for thirty years but never applied until recently. I realized now that I am quite dense. This is quite a story in itself, this blinds man bluff, but it distracts from telling of the wonders of the universe. So instead I'll show the end view first and then tie it back to Newton's, Einstein's, Maxwell's, Schrodinger's, and Dirac's laws, theories and equations. These are my benchmarks. If I can demonstrate that a single model of a particle can generate results consistent with these benchmarks then I will be satisfied that the key I was looking for has been found. And I know that other theories exist. I welcome others to bounce these ideas against them. We need all of the new ideas we can come up with if we are going to move out of the old 20th century way of doing things and enter the new 21st century.

Lastly I'll show what I know of the new

science. Of dark matter warp engines, of force fields, and energy enough to last us through multiple lifetimes. It's all here. The science of space travel is within our grasp. A whole new future awaits.

Warning: If you are one of those people who does not want to know why, read no further. For I have come to the end of my quest and have reached a vision so profound, so enormous and so simple that it has taken my breath away. And it has changed my view of the universe. So come no further if you don't want your universe rocked!

And one last thought if you are willing to go on. As an old man my thoughts are different than when I was younger. I thought I had all of the time in the world and I was going to conquer the universe. Now I realize as time runs out that it had nothing to do with conquering. Instead the universe wants to be understood as much as we want to understand it. We're joined. And at times our concepts will change as our knowledge increases but we should never throw away the old. It stills a

part of who we are and how we understand the universe. This is in the simplest way to state the theory of Ubiquity. Everything is interconnected. Everything exists and has value. And you are a part of it.

David Butterworth, Earth 2008

Book 2 Chapter 1: Description of Subspace

The purpose of physics is to understand and define the interactions between objects in physical space. Only these interactions provide any knowledge about the nature of these objects. However all interactions occur across space showing a definite relationship between the object's nature and space. This is the objective of this book to define this relationship.

For decades physicists have attempted to explain the behavior of physical matter with the use of other smaller particles like Gluons and Quarks. This approach avoids answering the basic questions of how matter occupies space, why certain particles carry charge, and what is the nature of gravity? This book presents an alternate view of particle physics with these answers in mind. It is possible to simplify the theories of physical matter with the introduction of a subspace substance, a substance made out of space.

This seems to be a strange starting point,

examining how space can contain space. We think of space as an absolutely uniform and empty substance that can contain matter and various kinds of force fields. A stage or backdrop to the objects of importance but of itself it's of very little consequence.

However, in the last one hundred years of scientific thinking space has been proven to be more than just a backdrop. For example, objects cannot move faster than the speed of light. Why the limitation? If it's only empty space, how can it force a limitation on objects? Likewise, light cannot move at any other speed than the speed of light. And even worse this speed is constant to all observers even if they are moving at different speeds in relation with each other.

Also, if space is indeed empty then the boundaries to the objects in this space should be very distinct. An object is either occupying space or it isn't. But the truth is that the boundaries are not very distinct. There's an uncertainty to the measurement of an object's energy and momentum across space. Space

appears to be more than just space.

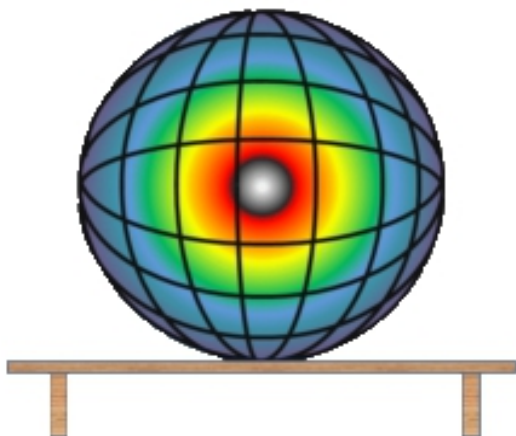
Here is an alternate theory to the concept of matter occupying space. This is the "Theory of Ubiquity" where each particle of matter consists of concentrated space. And it's this concentrated space alone that accounts for all of the properties of matter. Removing all concepts of masses and force fields, the simple geometry of subspace is sufficient to explain the interactions of physical matter.

The Concept of Concentrated Space:

How can space occupy space? If we can accept without question the fact that matter can occupy space then why can't we accept the fact of space occupying space? One problem that we have with this concept is that space is infinite in size. How can space that's infinite in size occupy another space that's infinite in size without consuming all of it? There would be no uniqueness to this space. Every place would appear the same.

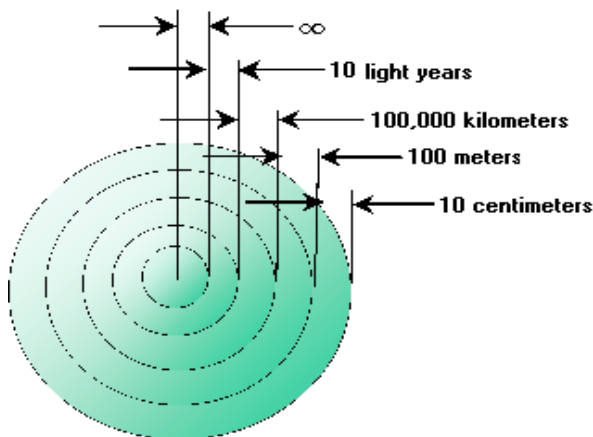
Instead, let's define a space called a subspace

that is somehow trapped within a region of space. The region of space may be fixed, but the subspace contained within it is infinite.



Picture a ball of infinite space 30 centimeters across, approximately 1 foot. We could stick our whole arm into this ball and it would appear as if we lost our arm but we didn't. We could pull our arm out unharmed. Strangely enough, we could safely place this subspace on a table without losing the table. The table is larger than the outside of the subspace. The

subspace is only infinite within itself.



If we could look within the structure of the subspace, we would see an amazing sight. If we could measure its depth, we could see (as an example) that the first 5 centimeters measured from the outside edge towards the center is actually 10 centimeters long. The second 5 centimeters measures 100 meters long, with the third measurement is actually 100,000 kilometers long, and the next 10 light

years long. The last measurement is infinite in size with the innermost center a point of infinite size. It would be an entire universe.

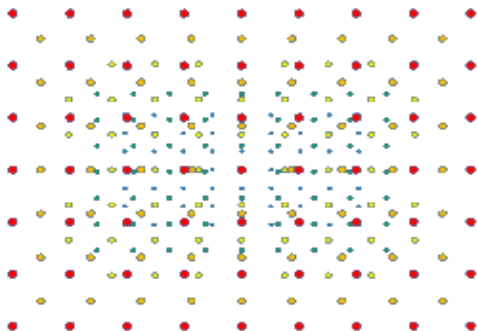
Of course I picked these values arbitrary. These could be $1/\text{radius}$ values, exponential values, or something else. At this point I am still not sure and would welcome the reader's input. But be careful, the real question is in the placement of the ruler.

How do we contain this subspace? The sphere, if it were not contained, would grow at some unknown rate consuming the table and everything else that's in the universe. In fact, the only way to contain this subspace is with another subspace, both being infinitely large they couldn't fit into each other. But before we determine how a subspace interacts with another subspace, we need to redefine the concept of space.

The Detection of Space:

What is space? Space can be viewed as a set of points that occupy space. Each point is

actually space-less; a point has no dimensions. Rather, it is the distance and direction between the points that defines space. But what connects the dots? What produces this relationship between one point in space and another?



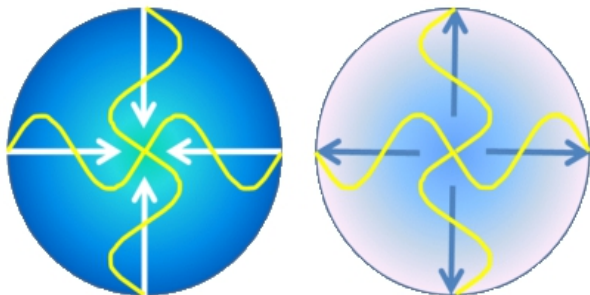
The easiest place to start is with a line. A straight line through space is an instantaneous connection of points. Since I am not talking about energy or information, I am not limited by the speed of light. Now imagine that this line is through a subspace. If it connects the edge of the subspace to its center point it would be infinitely long. Would the

connection of dots still be instantaneous? Substitute the words "infinite speed" for instantaneous. The meaning is identical, except we have now provided direction to our dot connecting process. Mathematically we cannot derive this dot-connecting period, but as sometimes happens during physical model formulations, we are going to make a leap of logic here.

What we are actually viewing is the definition of the speed of light. It takes time to connect an infinite set of dots even at an infinite speed. And this time will always appear to be the time required for light to move across the corresponding distance of regular space. For the sphere of 30 centimeters, this process would be of the order of one nanosecond. This is the basic reason why the speed of light is constant regardless of the speed of any observer; the infinite speed is still infinite speed even if you add or subtract the speed of the observer.

Note also that there is direction to this process; there are two types of subspaces, ones that

appear to be sinking light and ones that appear to be a source of light. Light is the viewing of the infinite in the finite.



This is the actual appearance of the subspace in normal space. Its space appears to us as light. This is what I call virtual light. Its wavelength is related to the distance that it's traveling. The smaller the subspace, the greater the energy within. The larger the subspace, the lesser the energy. And since this light is a virtual light, the subspaces are not creating or destroying energy. However, they are holding energy so the concept of stored energy must be related to subspace, in other words, the mass of a particle.

Subspace Behavior:

At this point, it is possible to describe an elementary particle made from multiple subspaces and the concept of dark matter made from a single subspace. First, however, we need to explore the detailed model of the subspace interactions. The models shown here are ones that unifies the various benchmarks of physics that will be discussed at the end of this book. However, we have to overhaul one concept, our view of three dimensional space. Our space exists as an interaction of the subspaces, in-between them. Without subspaces, without matter, there would be no space.

One of the philosophical questions that people have been trying to answer is "Why is the universe only in three dimensions?" One cannot place four pencils at right angles to each other. And the deeper question of the nature of time. What is meant by the ticking of the clock? Strangely enough space and time does not exist as a Universe wide concept at all, but only exists within the subspaces. As

these subspaces interact with each other they "smear" themselves across space and time. The great number of subspaces creates this steady three dimensional space and time that we live in. That is the reason a force always cause movement since it causes a change in space and time.

It turns out that a subspace is flat which means that it is limited to only two dimensions. This is not saying that the subspace is flat in a three-dimensional universe. It's the interactions of the subspaces that make the space that we live in. The universe is defined by the subspaces. The real question is what happens when two subspaces touch when they have one dimension in common and one dimension perpendicular with each other? A whole set of dynamics shows up that is quite surprising.

A subspace that stops expanding or shrinking starts spinning. And since a subspace defines space it affects other subspaces. The spinning causes the other subspaces to be smeared across space. This smearing is the same as

having an infinite set of subspace disks placed on top of each other. Another interesting detail is that this smearing is happening at the speed of light.

The spinning subspace contains energy inversely related to the size of the subspace. The subspace behaviors are shown in the following list.

Seven Rules of Subspace Behavior:

Rule #1 Normal space exists between and because of Subspace interactions. One universe made out of multiple universes.

Rule #2 Subspaces are always infinite in size. They are at their smallest on the outside boundary.

Rule #3 Subspaces contain virtual light between their center points and their boundaries. This distance measured in real space is the wavelength of this light. The light speed is always C measured across normal space.

Rule #4 There are two types of subspaces, one sourcing virtual light and one sinking virtual light. The sourcing subspaces are in expansion. The sinking subspaces are decreasing in size.

Rule #5 Two subspaces of the same type cannot overlap. Subspaces don't contain subspaces.

Rule #6 Virtual light can be summed together between subspaces at their boundaries. These boundaries define normal space. This light can be viewed as a perpendicular and tangential component to the subspace boundaries.

Rule #7 The perpendicular aspect of this light must equal zero or the boundary between the subspaces will move based upon the vector addition of the light's energy.

Another way to state Rule #7 is that the boundaries of the subspaces must agree with each other. The larger the subspace the smaller it's outside boundary because of its

inverse space nature. When subspaces touch their boundaries must agree or movement will occur until the dimensions agree.

The physical universe is between the subspaces. Its scale is not the subspace's scale since it is not made out of concentrated space, it's mapped from the outside in instead of the inside out.

These seven rules are sufficient to build a particle model that can explain gravity, electromagnetic, nuclear strong and nuclear weak forces. This model is not proven yet and will require extremely high energy collisions since the elemental base particle is much larger than any known particle.

Book 2 Chapter 2: Particle Models

The heart of the physics is in the modeling so the following section introduces three models of particles, their interactions with physical forces, and a simple list matching known particles.

Elementary Particle Models:

Three examples of models are given below. The one subspace model shows dark matter particles. The two and three subspace models shows matter / anti-matter particles. They both explain matter's behavior except the three subspace model exactly matches Einstein's Gravitational model.



The following building block will be used in this elementary particle model construction. A subspace that is held in place will start to spin. This spinning smears other subspaces because it's the subspaces that define space. The overall point of the construction is having two or more subspace objects smearing each other by their spins making a particle model. Since the subspace is a two dimension object if it is smeared across another dimension it wouldn't know or care. By convention I am using the right hand rule. Looking at your right hand your fingers are showing the direction subspace spin and your thumb is showing the direction that the subspace is being smeared for a sourcing subspace. A sinking subspace uses the left hand rule. This is a simple concept if you are willing to let go of the three dimensional universe. And note this is a static model where everything is held in check. A dynamic model is a bit more complicated involving light, gravity waves, and the like.

Using One Subspace:

A dark particle is a single subspace particle. A

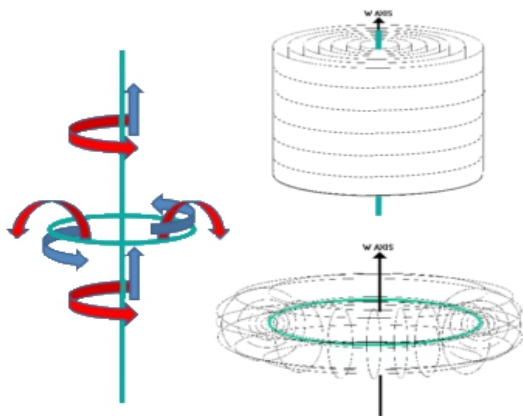
sourcing subspace particle will expand pushing all other particles away from it with a momentum inverse to it size. A sinking subspace is shrinking in size but its force is growing. So the sourcing subspaces affect the universe as a whole separating star fields and galaxies but sinking subspaces may cause violent, localized distortions. Subspaces appear to have no mass, gravity, or charge that we associate with elementary particles. Their most surprising feature is that they do not spin unless their expansion or shrinking tendencies are stopped.

Using Two Subspaces:

An elementary particle is the basic building block used to construct all other particles. As such it must contain all of the properties of matter; it must have mass, it must have a gravity field, and it must explain the electromagnetic attraction and repulsion between charged particles. The following model meets these criteria. First however we must resolve the puzzle of how to contain the subspaces within this particle.

There are a number of assumptions that we can start with. First we only need to use two subspaces; this is an attempt to keep the model as simple as possible. Secondly the subspaces must be of the same type, rule #5. Only subspaces of the same type, either sourcing or sinking virtual light can contain each other. Thirdly the size of the particle may not be finite. The influence of a particle extends throughout space. It may be that in some multiple dimensional ways the particle may be extended through space as well.

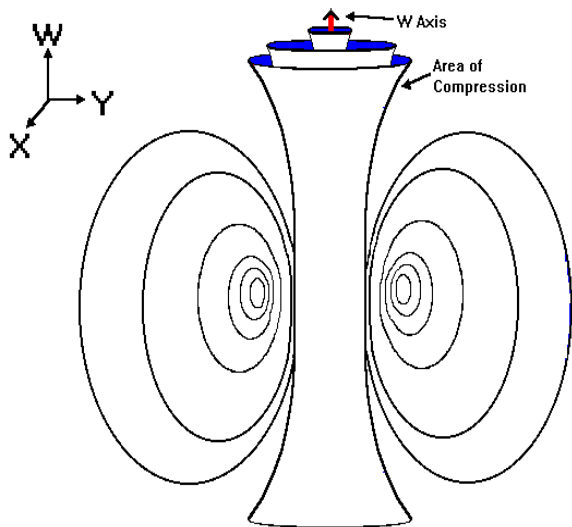
If we take the simplest possible model of two spheres of subspace side by side we immediately note that neither subspace is contained. They just move away from each other. If we surround one sphere with a donut shaped subspace, one whose infinite centers are on a ring, then we see that the sphere is only captured on the plane of the donut but would spill out above and below.



A model which is comprised of two subspaces that are locked together is based upon a line and a circle. The innermost subspace is a cylindrical shape subspace along the fourth dimensional axis, identified as the W axis. This is a real axis not the time axis used in Relativity. Instead of having just one center of infinite space, there is an infinite set along the W axis. The space is concentrated inward toward the W axis. The outermost subspace is a donut shaped subspace surrounding the innermost subspace at the $W=0$ position.

Instead of having just one center of infinite space, there is an infinite set along the circle in the center of the donut. The space is concentrated inward toward the circle.

The overall particle model consists of these two subspaces in conflict with each other. Now picture the line subspace expanding in width and the ring subspace trying to expand. There would be an area where they would stop each other. This is called the area of compression. The forces perpendicular to the area of compression from both these subspaces are equal and opposite keeping the subspaces locked in place. This is because this force, the virtual light, is perpendicular to the W axis and the circle; the subspaces are only two dimensional. They map out a parabola hourglass around the W axis which is equal distance from the W axis and the circle. Because the distances are equal the forces are equal and the perpendicular part of the forces is in balanced.



This Area of Compression is the space described by a simplified version of Einstein's General Theory of Relativity (shown below) for the case of light being drawn in by gravity. And in truth this is normal space, the space we live in, curved by the effects of gravity.

$$[1 - (4GM)/RC^2] d(CT)^2 - dR^2 = dS^2 = 0$$

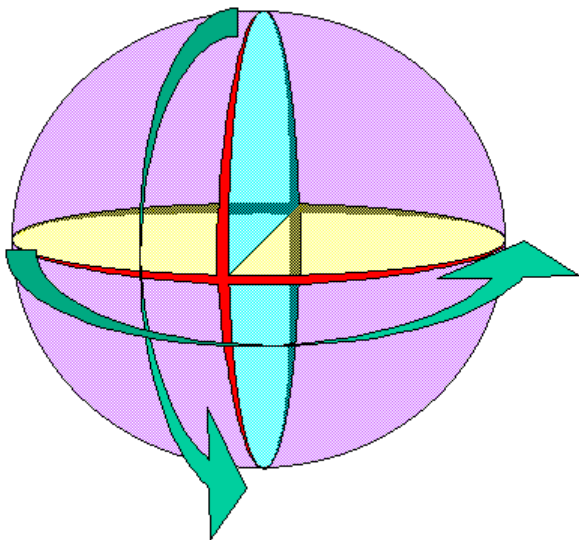
Where $d(CT)^2 - dR^2 - dW^2 = 0$

This is a mathematical description of the area of compression where G equals the gravity constant approximately 6.67×10^{-11} $\text{nt meter}^2/\text{kg}^2$, M equals the mass of the particle in kilograms, C equals the speed of light approximately 3×10^8 meter/second, T equals time in seconds, and R equals the radial distance out from the center of the particle in meters.



What I described here is only one spin state of an elementary particle. There are two spin states to the particle. From the gravitational view the equations shown above are an equal distance between a line and a sphere. This cannot be visualized since it's a fourth

dimensional object creating a three dimensional space. The sphere is wrapped around the line but it doesn't touch it. This sphere is described by two great circles on the outer subspace perpendicular to each other which is required by Dirac's Equations describing how particles move in space. It takes both spins to define three dimensions. The Area of Compression is actually a compressed volume of space.



This gravity will be explained in detail in another section. First I need to show the simplicity of the two subspaces. A spinning subspace is only a two dimension object. But the real question is what's spinning? It's the dot connecting process, the definition of virtual light. The frequency of the virtual light is directly related to the spinning effect of singularity space. And this spinning is only

detected at the edge of the subspace boundary. This is where we see the actual light moving around the subspace. Both of these subspaces are spinning since they are locked against each other and cannot expand. The ring of the outer subspace was caused by the spinning of the inner subspace and the W axis line of the inner subspace was caused by the spinning around the ring of the outer subspace. This is the key to the theory.

Now we need to examine this area of compression (space) in greater detail for it is composed of light. To understand this intersection we need to review how the virtual light from the two subspaces react. For this example the type of subspace that sources light will be used. Both subspaces contain light moving out from the infinite center points out toward the edge of each subspace. The edge of each subspace is the area of compression. Because the two subspaces are different in shape, the patterns of the virtual lights are different. The first subspace has light moving perpendicularly from the W axis toward the

hourglass intersection. The second subspace has light moving perpendicularly from the focus toward the hourglass. As these two virtual lights touch, the vector addition of these two lights appears as a light along the intersection surface. As was mentioned before the perpendicular aspect of this light equals zero. Because of this fact, both subspaces are fixed.

Path of Light Across Four Dimensional Space

1) Einstein's General Theory of Relativity

$$dS^2 = \left[1 - \frac{4GM}{RC^2} \right] d(ct)^2 - dR^2 = 0$$

2) Adding a fourth dimension W to the three dimension R the radial distance from the center of a particle

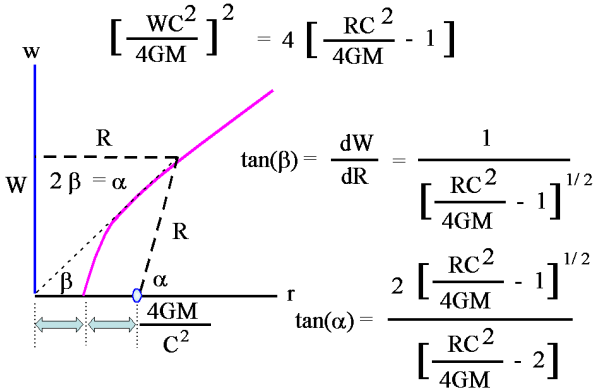
$$d(ct)^2 = dR^2 + dW^2$$

3) Adding the two together

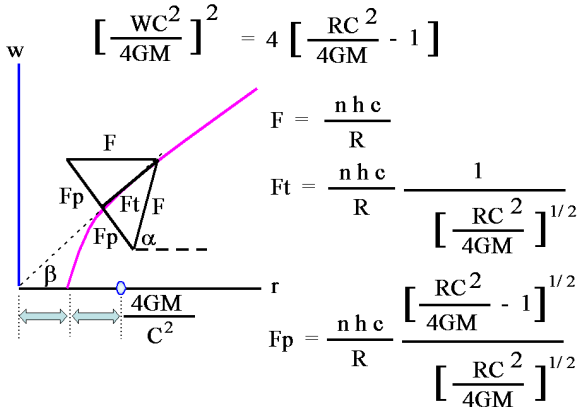
$$d(ct)^2 = dR^2 + dW^2 = \frac{dR^2}{\left[1 - \frac{4GM}{RC^2} \right]}$$

4) Solving the integral

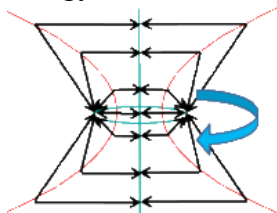
$$\left[\frac{WC^2}{4GM} \right]^2 = 4 \left[\frac{RC^2}{4GM} - 1 \right]$$



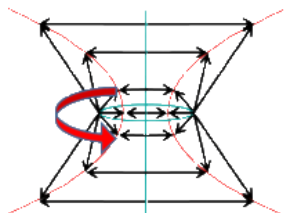
$$\tan(\alpha) = \tan(2\beta) = 2 \tan(\beta) / (1 - \tan^2(\beta))$$



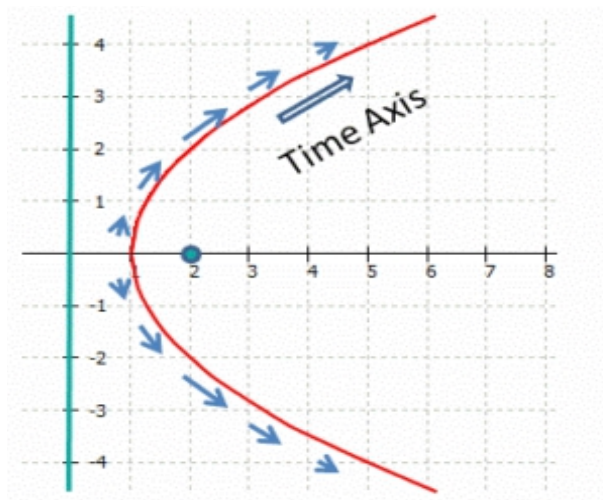
If both subspaces are sourcing virtual light, then the parallel addition of this virtual light on the hourglass would appear as light moving away from the particle. If both subspaces are sinking virtual light, then this parallel addition appears to be moving toward the particle. Now this is virtual light but it is along space and it looks like it is trying to move energy. This would break the model which needs to hold energy as mass not to dissipate or accept energy.



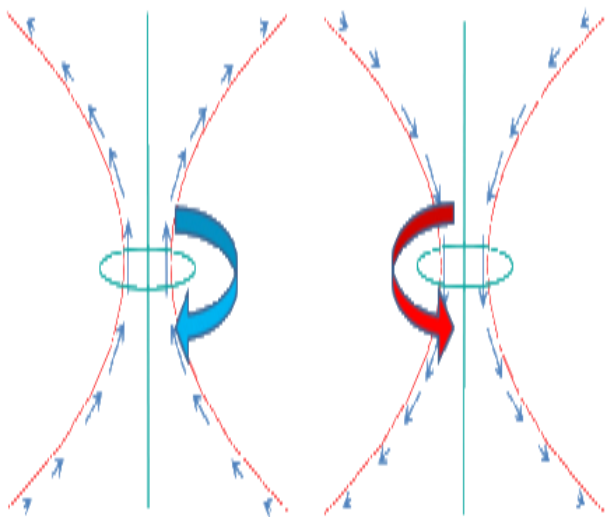
Anti-Matter



Matter



It is my thought that the virtual light adds or subtracts from the light that is being attracted by gravity or the shape of the area of compression. In other words I am introducing another concept; anti-matter and matter are spinning in opposite directions and has light moving across them in different directions.



Anti-Matter

Matter

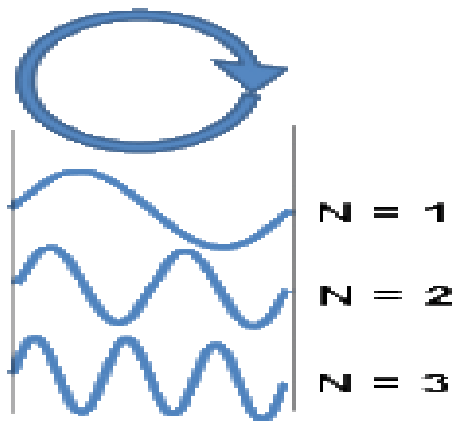
Those careful readers know that I am saying more. This model came from Einstein's General Theory of Relativity but I have extended the theory past the point that he extended it to go. He was interested in the top half of the drawings from the universe to the mass. But here I am saying that there is a

second universe, one above and one below. One is giving energy to the matter and one is giving energy to the anti-matter. But they are all tied together and the energy is the same. It just looks different than anything we have seen before. Don't give up it will make sense in the next section.

This light is the overall energy of the particle and for an elementary particle equals hc (approximately 2×10^{-25} joule meter) when integrated across the W axis. The energy at the neck of this area, at $W = 0$, appears to be the mass of the particle. We will use this energy at the neck as the mass for the continuation of this book.

Elementary particles can only exist in discrete sizes. This is because the gravity field is directly related to the size of the mass that produces it but the energy of the mass is inversely related to the size of the gravity. A larger gravity curvature would result in a smaller mass at the neck of the hourglass; the light around the neck being reduced in

frequency. A larger subspace would have a greater centripetal force but the energy around it would be less. And since it would start to attract more light it would not remain in balance and would have to reduce its size giving off energy. Remember, the spin of the subspaces reacting off of each other gave the shape of the gravity field.



It is important to note that the phase of this virtual light can come in different frequencies. The wavelength of this light is a multiple set of the distance that the light travels. The

wavelength can equal the distance ($n=1$), half of the distance ($n=2$), one third of the distance ($n=3$), etc. Also the phase changes as you move around the particle. The light sheet is continuous without sudden discontinuities or voids.

These balanced sizes approximately equal $n^{1/2} \times 10^{-8}$ KG, where n equals the number of wavelengths of light around the hourglass, matching the number of wavelengths of the virtual light. Note that the electron is only 9×10^{-31} KG and the proton is 1.7×10^{-27} KG. Thus, our known particles must be a composition of both matter and antimatter elementary particles.

So basically a subspace particle is an hourglass of light. There's more to the model of course, how it moves, how forces affect it, how it binds with other particles. But I don't want to overwhelm here. We will move these examples to other sections of this book.

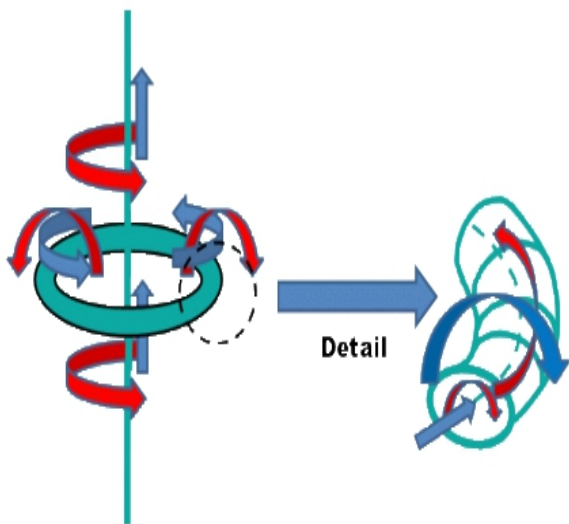
Using Three Subspaces:

This is exactly the same as the two subspace model except that there is a third subspace inside of the donut subspace. Instead of being equal distance between a line (the W axis) and a point on the ring ($8GM/C^2$) this is equal distance between a line (the W axis) and a circle ($2GM/C^2$) around a point on the sphere ($6GM/C^2$). This intersection is the space described by Einstein's General Theory of Relativity (shown below).

$$[1 - (2GM)/RC^2] d(CT)^2 \\ - [1 + (2GM)/RC^2] dR^2 = dS^2 = 0$$

Where $d(CT)^2 - dR^2 - dW^2 = 0$

This is a complicated model that has all of the attributes of the two subspace model. The only change would be the size of the particle and the gravity effects close to the particle. Outwardly it would appear the same.



It is in this spinning where the concept of a two dimension subspace became evident. Objects only spin in two dimensions around an axis. It appears as if the third dimension of each of the subspace particles in the elementary particle model came from the opposing subspace. The W axis subspace is rotating around the W axis. This spin continues past the area of compression into the sphere subspace, the one that resembles a

donut in the three dimensional view. This gave the donut its shape, passing a small circle around a larger circle. The donut is itself rotating which affects the first subspace, giving the third dimension to the W axis subspace, along the W axis itself.

Path of Light Across Four Dimensional Space

- 1) Einstein's General Theory of Relativity with the Transformation Invariant set to 0.

$$dS^2 = \left[1 - \frac{2GM}{RC^2} \right] d(ct)^2 - \left[1 + \frac{2GM}{RC^2} \right] dR^2 = 0$$

- 2) Adding a fourth dimension W to the three dimensions R the radial distance from the center of a particle

$$d(ct)^2 = dR^2 + dW^2$$

- 3) Adding the two together

$$d(ct)^2 = dR^2 + dW^2 = \frac{\left[1 + \frac{2GM}{RC^2} \right] dR^2}{\left[1 - \frac{2GM}{RC^2} \right]}$$

- 4) Which results in

$$dW^2 = \frac{\left[\frac{4GM}{RC^2} \right] dR^2}{\left[1 - \frac{2GM}{RC^2} \right]}$$

- 5) Solving the integral

$$\left[\frac{WC^2}{2GM} \right]^2 = 8 \left[\frac{RC^2}{2GM} - 1 \right]$$

where

G = Gravity Constant

M = Particle Mass

C = Speed of Light

R = Radial Distance from the center of the particle

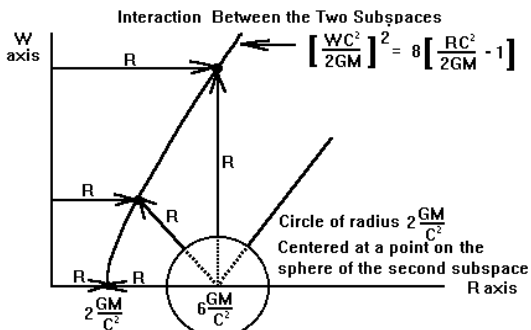
t = time

h = Plank's Constant

G = $6.67 \times 10^{-11} \text{ nt meter}^2 / \text{kg}^2$

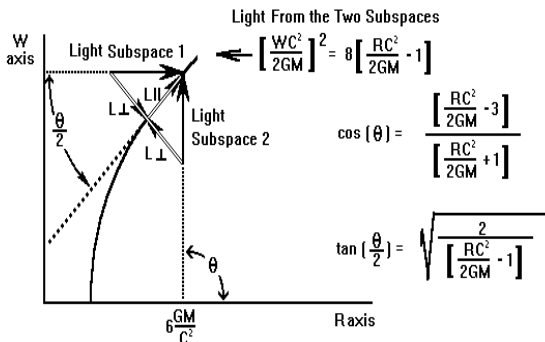
h = $6.63 \times 10^{-34} \text{ joule sec}$

c = $3 \times 10^8 \text{ meter / sec}$



The light from the first subspace is moving outward from the
W axis with energy $\approx \frac{nhc}{2\pi R^2}$

The light from the second subspace is moving outward from a
sphere with a radius of $6GM/C^2$ [shown here as a point]. It's energy
is $1/\text{distance it travels} - 2GM/C^2$ which is exactly the same strength
as the energy from the first subspace.



The lights from both subspaces are exactly equal in strength and add together to produce a light parallel (L||) to the path of the hourglass.

The perpendicular light (L⊥) cancels out, subspaces are at rest.

The slope of the parallel light equals $\tan\left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)$ which equals $\frac{dW}{dR}$.

Book 2 Chapter 3: Interactions between Elementary Particles

The following section describes the interactions between elementary particles of both matter and anti-matter. I am using the simplest model which uses only two subspaces to describe an elementary particle. There is something in me that like a parabola.

The basic definition of a matter / anti-matter particle depends upon the subspaces that make it up. By convention we will assume a sourcing subspace produces a matter particle and a sinking subspace produces an anti-matter particle. The truth of this convention will have to wait for future experiments. Like Franklin I am taking a guess.

Space and Gravity:

How can we have multiple particles in space? In the world that we know it's easy, one particle is over here and one particle is over there. In the world of subspaces it appears to be just as simple with, for whatever reason, all particles have their mass at the $W=0$ point of

the W axis. This may seem strange since the subspaces are defining space but they are also connecting to this space top and bottom. Their gravities are combined.

But now a question appears. Both matter and anti-matter have attractive gravity. But we are going to combine matter and anti-matter together in making composition particles that have less mass than the particles they are composed of. That means that these composition particles would also have less gravity. How did the gravity get reduced? Remember that the subspaces are spinning which caused the shape of the gravity in the first place. Also remember that matter and anti-matter are spinning in opposite directions so they are counteracting each other. This is shown later on when Quantum Mechanics affects are shown.

Electrical Attraction and Repulsion:

But how can matter and antimatter interact?

To understand the interaction between matter

and antimatter, we must first understand the effects of the virtual light on the boundary of the subspace. This virtual light can be viewed as an energy whose strength is related to n , the size of the elementary particle. This energy from the subspaces is working along the time axis of the particle along the area of compression from the positive W axis to the negative W axis. The summation of energy across time equals force. So the force of a subspace is related to the energy it expels. An elementary particle expels no energy within itself since the subspace particles are locked together. But against other subspaces they are not interlocked so energy will be expelled in the form of a force.

On the area of compression the perpendicular component of the light is equal and opposite from both of the subspaces. If there were an unbalanced perpendicular component of this light, the surface would move accordingly. The influence from another particle's subspace would cause this effect.

This force is the force between two charged

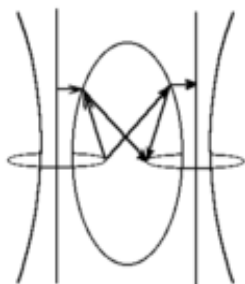
particles. Since the virtual light is related to the n (the number of wavelength) times hc , and the fine-structure constant shows a relationship between q^2 and hc , then we can represent this force as:

$$F = (nhc)/2(\pi)r^2 = (nq^2)/2(\pi)r^2$$

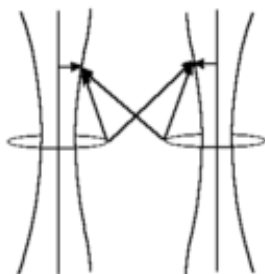
The attractive and repulsive nature of the force is dependent upon whether it is matter or anti-matter, it's made up from either sourcing or sinking subspaces. The interaction between particles is the force of electromagnetism.

Two like particles, matter-matter or antimatter-antimatter will repeal each other due to the combination of forces from their inner foci. Likewise, a matter / anti-matter combination will attract each other up to the $8GM/C^2$ limit. This $8GM/C^2$ limit is related to the Nuclear Strong force that counteracts the force of two charged particles across a short distance. It appears that two like particles can stay within this limit without experiencing a repulsive force.

Electronic Attraction Repulsion



Matter - Antimatter



Matter - Matter

Notice that this area of compression is now joined between particles. This area is our normal space. And the particles existing in normal space is this combining of light forces, the interconnections of the edges of the subspaces, which is how particles touch. Also notice that a lot of energy is locked within a matter - anti-matter attraction. Moving up or down the W Axis into the past or future we see the combined particle. At the $W = 0$ point which I call now we see the individual

particles. This is the heart of Quantum Mechanics.

Nuclear Strong Force:

This Nuclear Strong force is not a separate force at all. It's the point where the electromagnetic attraction stops being effective. It's where the subspaces almost stop spinning. In truth it has to do with movement where the particles spinning around each other cancel the force and in truth cancel the spin. This has to be at a close distance.

Nuclear Weak Force:

This is also not a separate force. Nuclear weak has to do with decaying states or particles giving up energy. The states of an elementary particle have to do with number of phases around it or n . These are stable states and between every stable state is an unstable state. One can sit at an unstable state for a while. I have not shown yet how electromagnetic energy enters or leaves a particle but it makes it ring for a period. This is because the electromagnetic energy is a distortion of the

area of compression.

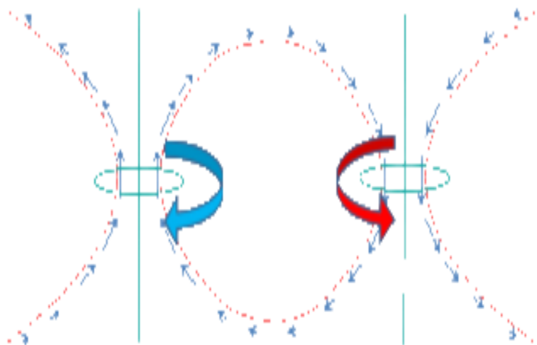
Book 2 Chapter 4: Composite Particle Models

It is possible to develop particle models where composite particles consist of both matter and anti-matter particles. In these models the summation of masses must add up to zero, since the elementary particles are much heavier than any known particles. The relativistic movement of the masses provides the delta changes that give the particles their masses. Likewise, the forces are added together with the residual forces accounting for the charge of the particles. Since the mass is related to $n^{1/2}$ and the electrical force is proportional to n , the generation of the model is quite simple. The list of particles could go on forever, but a simple list is presented with a possible matching of known particles.

Neutrinos:

Looking at the simplest particle construction shows a particle of no mass. It is made out of one anti-matter elementary particle and one matter elementary particle. This neutrinos

particle also has no charge. It is hard to determine its stability, but it must move at a speed close to the speed of light, since the two masses cancel each other out. There is no relativistic mass addition to give it any weight.

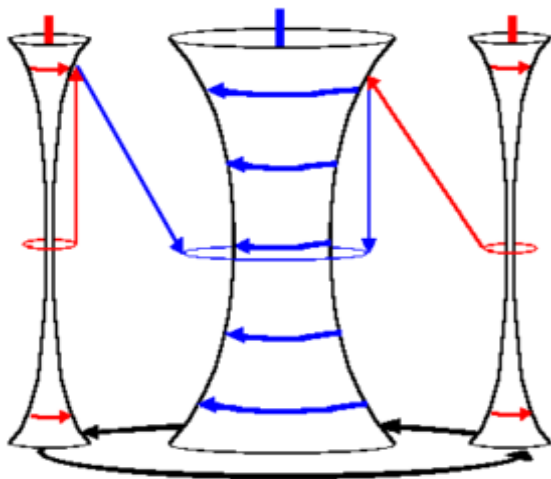


This raises an interesting question, since matter and anti-matter explode on contact producing light, why doesn't the neutrino explode? There is a lot of energy in a single elemental particle. This energy exists at the $W = 0$ part of the neutrino but it does not exist in the blended particle state, those in the positive and negative W axis directions. The particles

sit in an energy well; I suspect that the explosive energy has already been given up although the potential to give up energy if the neutrino is destroyed is a possibility.

Electron:

The next model shows two matter particles moving around an anti-matter particle. Each of the outer particles has a mass of 1, and the innermost particle has a mass of -2. The two outer particles rotate around the inner particle billions of times a second at a distance comparable to the Compton wavelength. This produces the relativistic mass change that equals the weight of the electron. Of course, this raises the question about the resultant leftover forces. The inner particle has a spin of 4, and the outermost particles have a spin of 1 each. The leftover spin of two is the charge of the electron.



Is radiation generated from the spinning particles? If we could look at the light, we could see that the gravity actually bends the light so that the effects of the spinning particles are localized and cannot be detected outside of the composite particle. The effect of the blended particle is just the charge and the gravity.

This model does show various characteristics of an electron. It has a charge and a magnetic

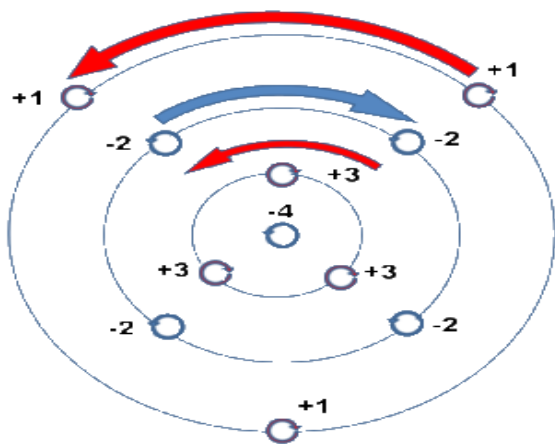
moment. The charge is distributed in a ring around the elementary particles that make up the electron. Its energy is distributed across space except where it connects with a positively charged particle like a proton. At that point the overall energy of the particles is joined together. This is part of the bonding process that holds atoms together.

Note that making higher states of the electron with, for an example, an anti-matter core of -4 and two matter particles of 2 each increases the charge in this case by a factor of four. There is also an example of a core of $-12^{1/2}$ with two $3^{1/2}$ particles with a triple electron charge. And a third example of a core of $-8^{1/2}$ with two $2^{1/2}$ particles with a double electron charge.

This however does not match the evidence of the Muons particle or the Tau particle since they both have the same charge as the electron. A more likely possibility is that there are more particles present in the Muons and Tau particles because when they decay neutrinos

are produced and it is my belief that subspaces cannot be created or destroyed.

An example of a Muons particle has 11 elementary particles as opposed to the 3 that composes the electron model. It consists of a core of a -4 with three 3 particles, four -2 particles, and three 1 particles. The overall mass is hard to predict since there are both matter and anti-matter particles moving at high speeds. When the particle decays into the electron state four matter particles and four anti-matter particles are expelled as neutrinos. This provides insight into why the electron does not decay into a lower state. It is sitting with an odd number of particles.



Mesons:

The mesons models are interesting because they seem to fit some of the observations to date. They are heavier than the electron model and have more degrees of freedom. There are an infinite number of forms for the Meson model. They are centered around the -3 particle and have various states each with a different charge. There is a zero charge state consisting of a -3 core with three 2 particles

and three -1 particles. There is a negative 2 spin (single charge) consisting of a -3 core with two 2 particles and a single -1 particle. This gives a clue to their instability. Stability may have to do with refresh, the sinking and sourcing of light from the universe.

When one divide the number of internal forces to the number of mass particles, the mesons have a higher number than the electron. To put it simply there are more things spinning in a mesons than an electron.

Baryons:

Anyone's guess although mesons circling anti-matter electrons is an option. The next step will involve calculating the weight of these particle models. Hopefully someone will champion these calculations.

One last thought about particles. These are particles of matter that may have energy and gravity but may have an entirely different light shell to interact with light. I feel that there are other models for particles perhaps consisting

of multiple subspaces that would react entirely different than the particles listed above. They may occupy more than three dimensional of space.

Book 2 Chapter 5: Physics Revisited

Using the model of the electron I wish to go back to the various guiding concepts of physics and re-exam this models behavior against these theories and ideas. If the elemental particle behaves in accordance to these theories then a unity will exist to physics. This has been my goal since the beginning. Currently many of these theories are disconnected from each other. And it not because any of these theories are wrong; it was simply the fact that no one has tried to put everything together. There was no glory in it. Note that in many cases these theories are approximations, attempts to make order from experimental data. The benchmarking may not be a perfect fit. However if the benchmarking is close enough to fit any observations made upon this planet then I will be more than happy.

The following benchmarks are from a great many visionaries of science. I will only mention the main leaders who gathered the evidence together and brought order to the

results. As such I will review Newton's, Einstein's, Schrodinger's, Dirac's and Maxwell's theories and results. In many cases we will have to revisit the concepts that guided these theories to get to the essence of their truths. And it is important that only the simplest concepts be used. That's a must for any discovery of truth.

Newton's Laws:

Newton had three laws:

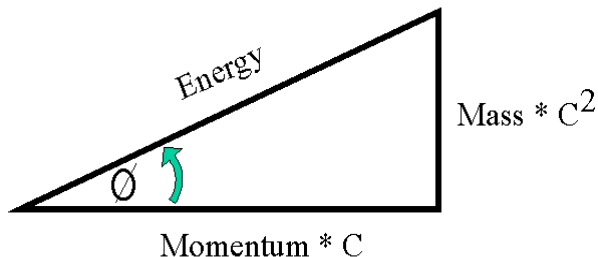
- 1) Every object in a state of motion tends to remain in that state of motion unless an external force is applied to it.
- 2) The relationship between an object's mass M , its acceleration A , and the applied force F is $F = ma$. The direction of the force vector is the same as the direction of the acceleration vector.
- 3) For every action there is an equal and opposite reaction.

Newton was attempting to bring order to the

universe. He developed Calculus which is the mathematics on how things change so he could measure and predict the motion of objects. He came up with the concepts of energy and force that have stood the test of time. His equations of an object's momentum (Mass x Velocity) and an object's Kinetic Energy ($\frac{1}{2}$ Mass x Velocity²) remained until the 20th century when superseded by Einstein's $E=MC^2$. He brought an order to physics that allowed it to branch into various fields and yet be an organized whole. And more than anything else, he kept the wonder intact. People could understand on a conception level how things behave.

Now in order to compare the Newton's Laws to the elementary particle model I need to make a detour first into one of Einstein's greatest discoveries. I need to do this because this was the key puzzle piece that I neglected for so long and proved to be so necessary in putting all of this together. This is a simple geometrical model that related the energy and the momentum of a particle of mass traveling

at speed V where the cosine of an angle equals V/C .



The model is a simple right triangle. The hypotenuse is the energy of the particle. The side adjacent to the angle mentioned above is the particle's momentum times C . The side opposite the angle is the particle's rest mass times C^2 .

The concept of momentum and kinetic energy here made sense. Newton's definition of momentum and kinetic energy were Taylor Expansions of the sine and cosine functions for speeds much slower than the speed of light.

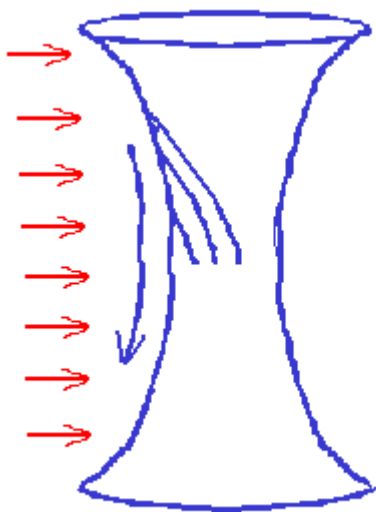
$$\text{Energy} = MC^2 + \frac{1}{2}MV^2 \text{ (cosine expansion)}$$

and Momentum = MV (sine expansion). This drawing became the key puzzle piece that put the whole theory together. This is exactly how light reacts with matter. The vector addition of energy across space and time explains everything. And this diagram still agrees with Newton's three laws.

If an object is at rest (you are part of the equation now since it has to be at rest with regard to you, the observer) light is moving vertical along the area of compression at the $W=0$ point. If light energy is hitting this particle giving it momentum then the object starts to move with an energy that is a vector combination of the original mass energy and the light's momentum. That's the first law. Notice that the particle is now on a slant.

When the light momentum hits the particle it does so across time, not just at the $W=0$ point. This is acceleration. The axis down the area of compression is the time axis. A simple way of looking at this is to look at discrete values, say every second there is a speed increase of 10 feet per second. The acceleration would be 10

feet per second. The velocity would be 10, 20, 30, 40 feet per second for each second. Each second is represented by a light momentum hitting the object moving it. Light moving along the time axis is hit multiple times, i.e. acceleration. And the amount of acceleration is dependent on the key puzzle piece diagram; heavier masses will accelerate less than lighter masses. This is the second law.



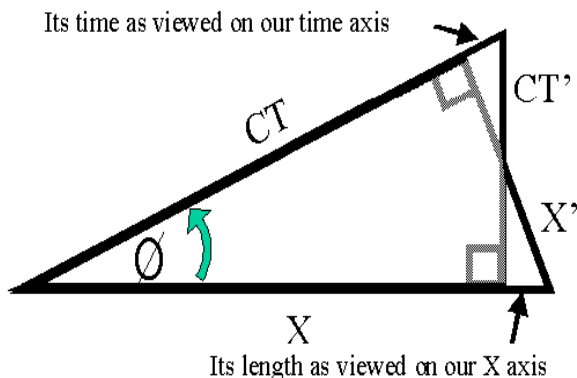
The third law is that all light interactions occur at the area of compression, the boundaries between the subspaces. All movement occurs there; all forces are vector added there. This area of compression is what we call normal space.

So this passes the Newton's test and it only

took 30 years to see it.

Einstein's Theories:

After I graduated from the University of Washington I went back to Einstein's theories of Relativity to explore the space-time equations and to gain some insight. I started here mapping the Lorenz Transformation to a geometrical shape. It didn't give me a lot of insight, but it did give me some. Again a particle of mass traveling at speed V where cosine of an angle equals V/C . The diagram relates an objects space and time to another observer's space and time with a velocity difference between the state of the object and the observer.



There has been however a lot of nonsense stated over Einstein's theory like the two twins traveling in opposite directions at speeds close to light and then coming back to find that each one is younger than the other. Don't think about it. I wish to employ a new standard here which I call Demarco's Rule. He was from the Bureau of Standards and wrote an article back in the 1960s to one of the physics trade journals, "Foundations of Physics" (before the internet everything was in hard bound books) which proves the existence of the speed of light simply by using the concept of comparable viewpoints. What you see has to

agree with what I see. If you're older than I'm younger. If I'm bigger than you're smaller. And so forth. I reject entirely the mysticism that have taken a hold of modern physics. Mystery is simply a stop sign that says look no further. Reject it. Instead always take the simplest path possible around the stop sign.

There is no limitation on going faster than the speed of light providing we can find the means to do it. We cannot go faster than light if we keep adding momentum energy to mass energy, the best we could do would be to approach the speed of light. We can however disconnect ourselves from the universe by effectively reducing our mass to zero just like the neutrinos. If we went faster than light then the light image that we left behind would say that we have slowed down (because we went through this area so quickly) and that we were flattened (less time to get the details). In other words its optical, you have not changed at all. And you would have already arrived at your designation long before the optical boom of the light caught up to you.

Now I do have a question on the General Theory of Relativity. The equation could have different forms close to the center of a particle. The equation used for the 3 subspace elementary particle is as follows:

$$[1 - (2GM)/RC^2] d(CT)^2 - [1 + (2GM)/RC^2] dR^2 = dS^2$$

The basic concept is at every point in time and space there is a change in position in time and space that creates a velocity change. So $CT_{\text{new}} = (1 - GM/RC^2) CT_{\text{previous}}$ and $R_{\text{new}} = (1 + GM/RC^2) R_{\text{previous}}$. The velocity change is $2GM/R$ when $(GM/RC^2)^2$ is very small. The change in velocity with respect to time, acceleration, is GM/R^2 which is Newton's Gravity theory.

The equation used for the 2 subspace elementary particle is as follows:

$$[1 - (4GM)/RC^2] d(CT)^2 - dR^2 = dS^2$$

The basic concept is at every point in time and space there is a change in position in time and space that creates a velocity change. So $CT_{\text{new}} = (1 - 2GM/RC^2) CT_{\text{previous}}$ and $R_{\text{new}} = R_{\text{previous}}$. The velocity change is $2GM/R$ when $(GM/RC^2)^2$ is very small. The change in velocity with respect to time, acceleration, is GM/R^2 which again is Newton's Gravity theory.

So since the model is based upon Einstein's theories this passes the Einstein's test.

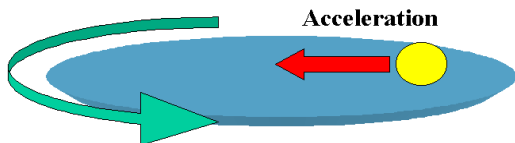
But before we continue we need to go back to the subspace definition and explore the definition of gravity. In its simplest terms it is like the concept of a merry-go-round. If an object is rotated around a fixed point in space that's located outside of the object's center, it experiences a centrifugal force. This force will throw the object to the outside towards infinity.

Normal Space



If an object is being rotated in a subspace around a singularity then it experiences a centripetal force. This force will throw the object to the inside towards infinity. At least this way it starts to make sense.

singularity Space



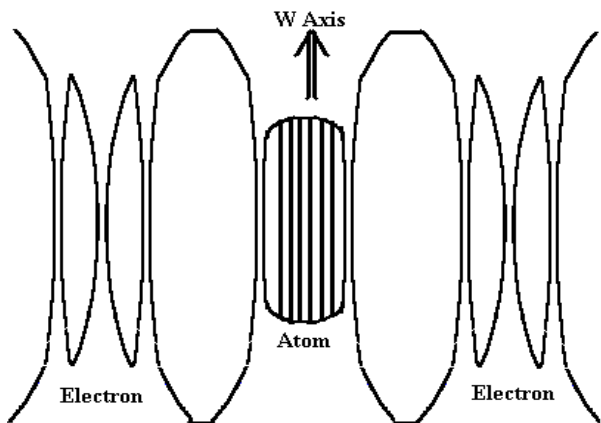
Schrodinger's Equation:

This was the basic attempt to look at particles

as waves of energy. It basically related time to space as moving waves of energy. This is usually shown as a standing wave within a potential well.

$$\hbar \frac{dy}{dt} = - (\frac{h^2}{2m}) \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} + \text{Potential } y$$

The basic form of the elementary particle model matches this in a general form however the particle has a core that this model does not have. The critical concept where Schrodinger's Equation excels is the electron shells that surround an atomic nucleus. Here the electron surrounds an atom as opposed to the original concept of orbiting an atom. This is where the elementary particle model makes sense.



At the $W=0$ mark, which I call the now position, all of the subspace particles are evident. But they don't touch each other except for in the future and in the past along the W axis. Take for example the electron model. Two matter particles surrounding an anti-matter particle creating a particle of smaller energy. This particle exists above and below the particles that make it up. Higher and lower it combines with the atomic body, in fact it surrounds it.

So this passes the Schrodinger's test.

Dirac's Equations:

These equations describe the quantum effects of physical matter by examining the energy and momentum generated by four waves identified as Y1, Y2, Y3, and Y4. The equations are as follows:

$$(P_O+MC)Y_1 = P_1Y_2 + (2)^{-1/2} P_2 (Y_2-Y_4) \\ + (2)^{-1/2} P_3 (Y_2+Y_4)$$

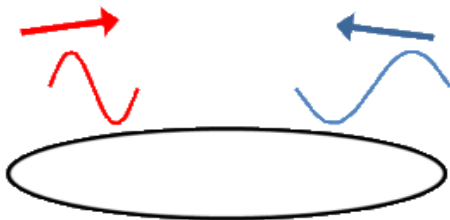
$$(P_O-MC)Y_2 = P_1Y_1 + (2)^{-1/2} P_2 (Y_1+Y_3) \\ + (2)^{-1/2} P_3 (Y_1+Y_3)$$

$$(P_O+MC)Y_3 = P_1Y_4 + (2)^{-1/2} P_2 (Y_2+Y_4) \\ + (2)^{-1/2} P_3 (Y_2-Y_4)$$

$$(P_O-MC)Y_4 = P_1Y_3 + (2)^{-1/2} P_2 (Y_1-Y_3) \\ + (2)^{-1/2} P_3 (Y_1-Y_3)$$

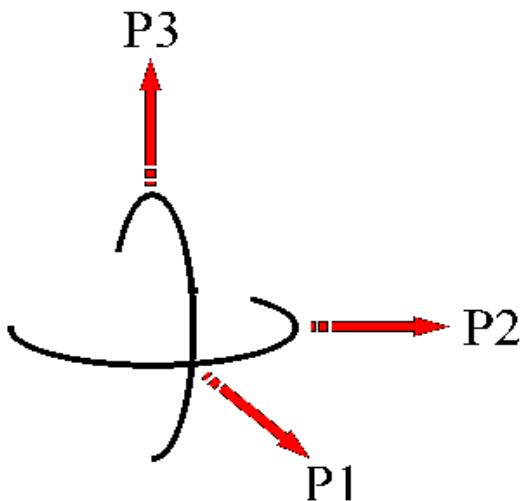
where $P_O = d/dt$, $P_1=d/dx$, $P_2=d/dy$,
 $P_3=d/dz$

This model shows the relationship between the mass (M), energy (P_0), and momentum (P_1 , P_2 , and P_3) of a physical object using four waves that exists across space and time. Two of these waves relate to matter and two relate to anti-matter. These waves are the spins of the elementary particle. A particle at rest has a single wave moving one way for matter and the other way for antimatter. During movement both waves exists going in opposite directions. This causes a group wave (energy) that moves slower around the circle as the particle moves faster. There is also a phase wave (frequency) that moves faster around the circle with increase speed.



This matches the model of the elementary particle which we have been viewing in three-dimensional slicing. I believe that there are only two slices of light in an elementary particle, not an infinite set. The light moving around the particle can only occur on two great circles. Anything else is interference and would shake the particle apart. Everything is in balance. But when the particle moves it is slanted in the direction of travel so the $w=0$ slice that we are looking at is going through a number of circles each at a different frequency. This complex waveform can be viewed as two waves moving in opposite directions.

This passes the Dirac's test. The simplest equation is in the P1 direction. As shown in the figure below the P2 and the P3 equations should match, they are symmetrical to each other.



Maxwell's Equations:

Maxwell developed two fundamental set of equations during his life, one for Thermodynamics and one for Electromagnetic.

Electromagnetic:

The first equation is the electrical field that produces a force on a charged particle. It is the fundamental part of the elementary particle design. The second equation is simply that the

force does not exist for magnetic particles; we have not found any monopole, single magnetic poles, in the physical universe.

$$\Delta \cdot E = \rho$$

$$\Delta \cdot H = 0$$

$$\Delta \times E = - \frac{dH}{dT}$$

$$\Delta \times H = J + \frac{dE}{dT}$$

The last two equations is the relationship between Electrical and Magnetic fields across time and space. Also in the last equation is the magnetic field generated by moving charged particles (J). These parts will have to be explained separately.

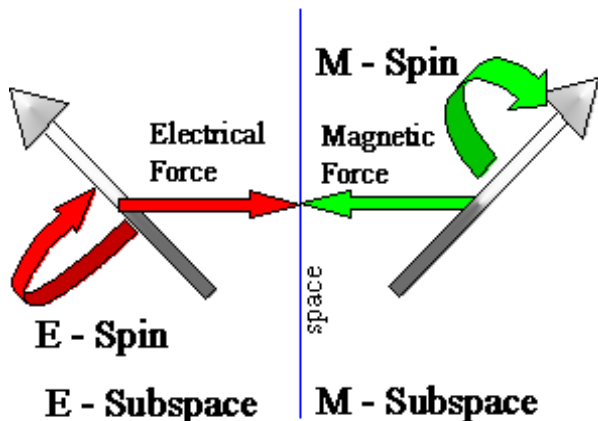
Now understand I am an electrical engineer, Maxwell's equations are my bread and butter. And to change Maxwell's equations is something that I do only as the last result. But I am updating this book here in 2011 and I

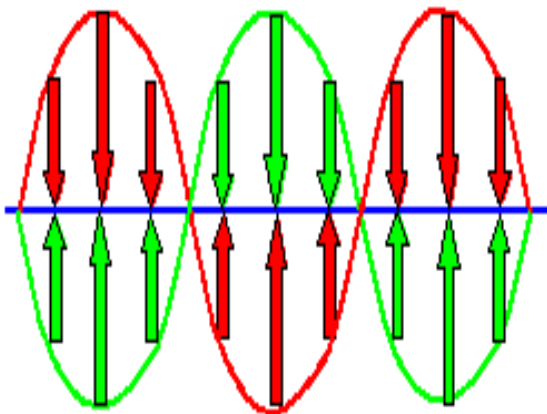
finally had a revelation about magnetic fields. And this changed my understanding about light and magnetic fields. And it helped me in another way. I never understood how an electron and a positron (anti-matter electron) could destroy each other and generate light. I could not conceive of the elimination of concentrated space. Now I know that the subspace centers are not eliminated. They are simply transferred to the light photons. Light itself is made out of two subspace particles. So let's go back and explore the concept of an elemental particle and we will establish our definitions as we go.

The Essence of Light:

The last two equations of Maxwell's equations is his claim to fame. The interaction of these two equations produces the waveform for light that only travels one speed, c , in the vacuum of space. It is sinusoidal in nature with the electrical field E and the magnetic field H orthogonal to each other and in phase with each other.

Now I have come up with a different definition. Two subspaces, one electric and one magnetic, are alongside each other but on a slightly different path perpendicular to each other such that the spin of one's subspace is the path for the other's subspace. Between the two they make a double helix exactly like our DNA molecules. Because it is across the W axis as well as the space axes we only see part of the waveform. This magnetic subspace is 90 degrees out of phase with Maxwell's magnetic field.



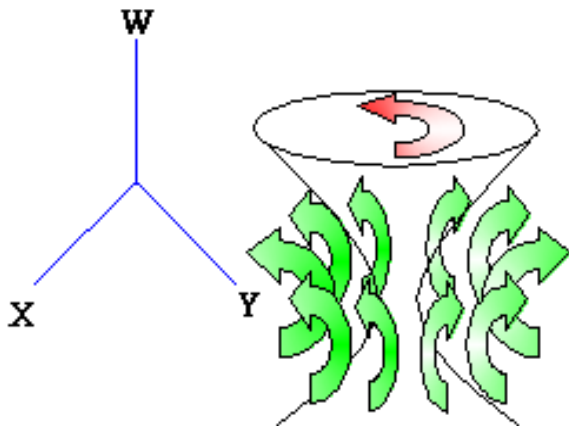


Now the question becomes can we change Maxwell's equations consistent with this insight and still explain electrical and magnetic effects?

Electrical Field from a Charge:

An elemental particle is defined as two subspaces in co-existence with each other. The two subspaces meet and touch at the area of compression that is physical space. There

are forces at the boundary from the focus (outer circle) and one from the inner directrix (W axis). I've described how the outer force from the focus is actually the electrical field. I have shown in chapter 3 that this force affects other particle's area of compression causing movement. Would it make sense to say that the force from the inner directrix is actually the magnetic field? It cannot affect other particles however it's inside; it cannot touch another particle's area of compression. What's important is the spin.

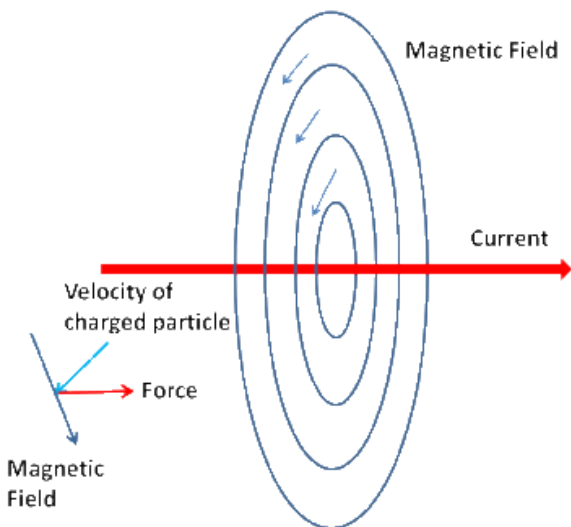


The forces are the result of the subspace spin. The electrical field force can be represented as a spin in the subspace around the focus point. It is in the W-R plane where R is the polar axis from the center of the particle in X, Y, Z space. The magnetic field force is represented as a spin around the directrix. It is perpendicular to the W axis. So they are always perpendicular to each other.

Magnetic Field from a Current:

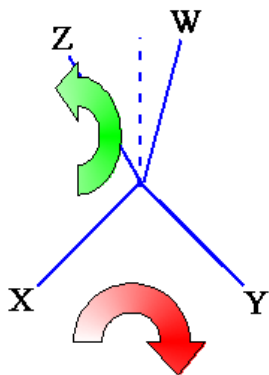
A magnetic field is developed around a moving charge, usually shown as a steady field around a current. The strength of the field is related to the number of charges and how fast they move. The force and direction is given in the following equation. The force is perpendicular to the magnetic field and the charged particle direction of travel.

$$\underline{\mathbf{F}} = q \left(\frac{\mathbf{v}}{c} \times \mathbf{B} \right)$$



My magnetic subspace and Faraday's magnetic field are perpendicular to each other. His fields flowed around the wire. This is simply a matter of convention. Magnetic iron filings align themselves around the wire so it would make sense to draw the fields that way. However a particle's internal magnetic subspace is not generating the magnetic field when it is moving. It is coming from the electrical subspace.

So here's the key. A particle is leaning in the direction of travel. The directrix is leaning and the circle of focal points is leaning. The spinning of the subspace around the focus points is also affected. At the sides, perpendicular to the direction of travel, the spinning has an electrical and a magnetic component; it is spinning up and down (W-R plane) and it is spinning in the direction of travel (plane dependent upon the spin of the particle). The amount of magnetic field is related to the leaning angle which is the velocity ($\cosine\ angle = v/c$).

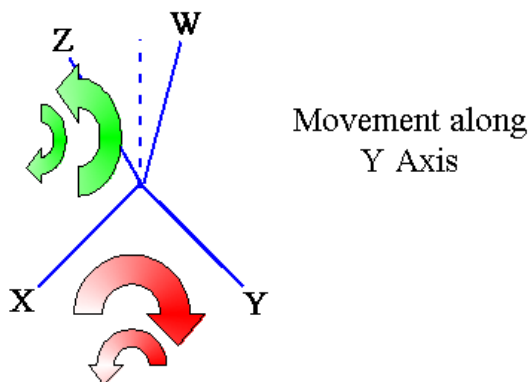


Movement along
Y Axis

Magnetic Field (Spinning in X-Y) caused by
the angle of the W axis toward the Y axis
seeing the Electrical Field spin X-W.

In like manner an electron is not affected by a magnetic field unless the electron is moving through the field. It cannot see the force unless it is moving and there is a slope to outer subspace spin. The slope allows the magnetic field to affect the spin of that particle's electrical subspace. And since it is affecting the side of the particle the change in the balance of forces in the area of compression will cause a movement perpendicular to the

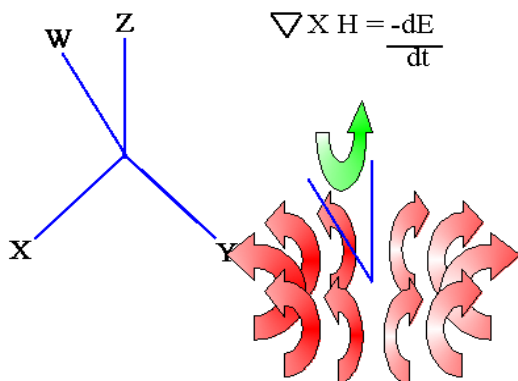
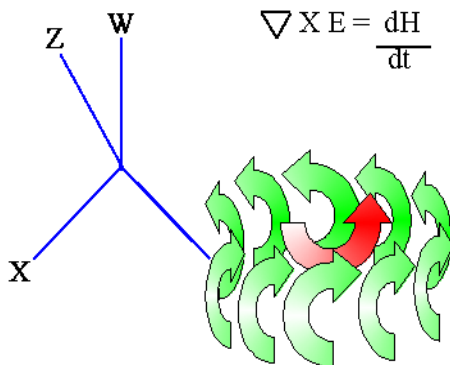
magnetic field (using Maxwell's definition) and the direction the particle is traveling.



**External Magnetic Field (Spinning in X-Y)
counteracts the induced spinning caused by W-X
spin causing a change in the Electrical Field**

But as I changed the direction of the magnetic fields what happens to the last two equations of Maxwell? They still make sense when you think about the spinning of the subspaces. If you have the version that doesn't have drawings you may want to skip this paragraph. The drawings shown are four dimensional

objects shown as two dimensional drawings so you have to use the axis guide to interpret the picture. The increase of an electrical field around an area produces a decrease of a magnetic field with respect to time through that area. And the increase of a magnetic field around an area produces an increase of an electrical field with respect to time through that area. Both drawings show this on the positive side of the time axis, positive W axis. However there is more here. Most of what I have shown here is the steady state view not the dynamic view of this interaction. There is more here as evidence by Plank's constant. Light doesn't go on forever but travels in packets of the length of Plank's constant. This is because of the spin of the subspaces as evidence by these two equations. But I've said enough here to validate my concept on how this model meets Maxwell's equation. The key of course is the movement of the "normal space", the area of compression.



Electrical and Magnetic fields across Time and Space:

At this point the reader would have thought that I was finished since I explained electrical, magnetic forces and the nature of light. But there is something else to consider. Everything that has been explained in this document so far has to do with steady state examples; objects that are motionless or are moving at a constant speed with each other. We mentioned forces but we have not discussed acceleration in great detail. Acceleration is the rate of change of speed with respect to time. The way that we would like to look at acceleration is a set of steady state velocities one after another. This view is simple but it is missing a lot of data. And what we see is a collision between the 19th century EM field theory and the 20th century Quantum Mechanics theories.

The 19th century EM field theory in question is these last two equations of Maxwell. A change in electrical fields around a section of space causes a negative increase in magnetic

fields through that space with respect to time. And a change in magnetic fields around a section of space causes a positive increase in electrical fields through that space with respect to time. The interactions of both of these effects causes light (Electromagnetic waves) to be generated.

The 20th century Quantum Mechanics view is that light is released in packets containing the energy released as particles change states between a higher energy state and a lower energy state. Likewise light is absorbed when a particle moves from a lower energy state to a higher energy state. These packets are always in groups relating to Plank's constant.

What happens to a particle's subspace when a particle is accelerated? We already know that the electrical and magnetic forces from the subspace centers travel at the speed of light. They cannot travel any faster since that is infinite speed over infinite distance. So this means there is a change in the area of compression. The shape of the area changes at the speed of light. It also means that gravity is

not instantaneous. This also says that spin of the subspaces can change from the inward point to the outermost points at the speed of light.

An electrical and magnetic subspaces' virtual light has a beginning and has an end. The beginning is in the infinite center of a subspace and the ending is on that area of compression that we call normal space. What happens when that area of compression moves and the light misses its target? Energy is transferred. But the direction beyond the area of compression is the other subspace and the other subspace is perpendicular to the subspace that missed its target. So the area of compression must change as the two subspaces react to each other. This point to a dynamic interaction between the subspaces.

As shown by Maxwell's last two equations there is an interaction between electrical and magnetic fields but remember this is all from external space fields from the outer subspace. But it does give us an indication on how one subspace spin affects another subspace spin for

changing slopes of area of compression. I feel that the same thinking can be used for the internal subspace magnetic and external subspace electrical interactions.

But I have to add another point here about the slope of the area of compression. Away from the particle the slope is almost 45 degrees. The two subspaces forces are almost at a 45 degrees angle of separation even though the spins are perpendicular to each other. The interactions will be greatest here. A bump on the area of compression in the W direction is electrical and a bump on the area of compression in another perpendicular direction is magnetic. This is because of the creation of space from the spinning of the two subspaces. Space is made out of these 2 dimensional slices and they affect each other. In the static condition on the area of compression the edges of the subspaces must match. An inch in one direction must equal an inch in the perpendicular dimension. When they don't match is when we have the moving of the subspace borders. Energy is the dynamic

interchange along the subspace boundaries. Remembering that the time axis is along the area of compression moving away from or towards the particle, the change of one with regard to space effects the other with regard to time and vice versa. As the slope changes the relation between time and spaces changes and the energy starts to dissipate from the Maxwell's equations view and the effect upon the subspaces start to grow. The subspaces are spinning and this is affecting their spin. The path changes (the ringing that I mentioned earlier) and enough energy will actually change the state of the subspace, i.e. a change in mass. A path change is actually a spin change which is actually a space change. And towards the center of the particle the forces are head to head. The time axis is perpendicular to the X, Y, Z space. The Maxwell's equation interaction will be very small. But this is where we need to add the 20th century view.

Light is also a particle. It is made up of two subspace particles that interact for a quantum of space moving at the speed of light.

Remember that the subspace particles are flat two dimensional objects. The two subspaces smear themselves over space for the quantum of energy that they contain.

Where did the subspace particles come from? From the charged particle that changed state or was accelerated. How do you peel a subspace particle from a subspace particle? The basic elementary particle is a relationship between its mass energy (energy around the circle) and the shape of the gravity's area of compression. Change either one would change the dynamic and may even cause ringing as a new state is finalized. The subspace could peel off from a subspace during such an event and find a new interaction with its corresponding cousin. An electrical subspace and a magnetic subspace would come together as light.

And this is the interesting part; all objects affect the area of compression. Gravities combine, forces interact all on these areas of compression because these areas come together to make this space. So light whose area is a thin one dimensional line, rides on top

of a particle's gravity, its area of compression.
So which view is correct?

I tend to think that they are both right. I think that light contains two subspace particles. I think that this changing gravity field is a gravity wave which still carries energy and still has a changing electric, magnetic subspace interactions, but it is different than the light subspace model. So in the end we complicated Maxwell's equations with different types of magnetic fields and different types of light.

This passes one of Maxwell's tests.

Thermodynamics:

$$d(\text{Internal Energy}) - \text{Temperature} \times d(\text{Entropy}) \\ + \text{Pressure} \times d(\text{Volume}) \leq 0$$

Where the following four rules apply:

If two thermodynamic systems are in thermo equilibrium with a third, they are also in thermo equilibrium with each other.

The increase in the internal energy of a thermodynamic system is equal to the amount of heat energy added to the system minus the work done by the system on the surroundings.

In an isolated system, a process can occur only if it increases the total entropy of the system.

As a system approaches absolute zero temperature all processes cease and the entropy of the system approaches a minimum value.

This is the science of the combustion engines, of refrigerators, of chemical reactions. It is critical in understanding how the universe works. This is at the large scale where the random interactions between molecules are defined as pressure and temperature, where molecules occupy volume and a strange entity called entropy is defined. Entropy is a quantity like disorder, the ability of shuffling a deck of cards to create a random progression of cards. How do we define this on the micro level of the elementary particle model? Basically an object occupies space, has energy,

bounces off other objects (pressure, temperature), and has order, its placement with everything else in the universe.

But notice something else. Energy exists because of and between the subspaces. Space exists because of and between the subspaces. How about Entropy? If nothing travels faster than the speed of light that has energy or information, then does the same definition apply? Is this between and because of the subspaces? I would say yes and this area needs investigation.

What is the relationship between objects? An energy has its own personal space and energy, it's interactions with other subspaces that determines the pressure, volume, temperature of the system (all of the objects together), and its viewpoint (that strange division between entropy and life that is the discussion of the next book).

In a closed system a process can only occur when the entropy increases, but life response to energy. Neither life nor entropy exists on a

per particle basis but across particles, across space and time. It's in the body of particles and their relationship and interactions with each other where we see life and entropy.

This passes the other of Maxwell's test.

In conclusion:

See how important this was. Dirac's equation, Maxwell's equation, and Einstein's equations were all related. And no one could relate these equations as long as they were treated as different fields of endeavor. And there is a lot of additional work to be done. A mathematician is required to expand the scope into the acceleration effects. There are a lot insights required if we are going to get away from fossil fuels into non-radioactive atomic energy.

Book 2 Chapter 6: The Future

I see space travel happening a lot faster than we ever imagined. So I wanted to give a glimpse of the future if we have the courage to go there. Remember either we live or we die, we grow or we shrink; it's fundamental to how the universe is constructed.

Dark Matter Warp Engines:

Dark matter is a useful substance since it pushes or pulls. You can find it in space away from any matter but it would be hard to mine since it would not exist in clumps but would be equally distributed across space. Some feel that dark matter is the black streaks that we see in other galaxies. Manufacturing it will require a lot of energy to tear apart particles to get at their subspace particles but the sourcing subspaces would make a very efficient and safe fuel. You would have to space them like we do with radio antennas to concentrate their force in one direction. The strength would be dependent on the amount of dark matter used. It would be akin to the sailboat only you are

using the Winds of the universe.

Now to go faster than the speed of light will require a warp field of sorts disconnecting the ship from the rest of the universe. In essence you have to make the overall mass of the ship zero in the same manner as the neutrinos particles. We would have to do a balancing act with anti-matter particles but it could be done.

Could we generate a gravity field using electrical and magnetic fields? A few years ago I would have said no but now I think it is possible. We would have to understand the dynamics of the updated Maxwell's equations.

Force Fields:

Force fields exist within nature with chemical bonding and electromagnetic attractions and repulsion. The ability to create fields of energy also exists within our culture with radio waves and radiation fields. The ability to push back on an object using a field of energy would be the key to a force field concept. This has to do with the acceleration concept of a

virtual photon missing its mark, the moving of normal space. It's doable. It may require the building of unnatural particles using multiple subspaces.

The trick with a force field is in the generation of space. Suppose you could generate miles of separation within an inch. You could build a wall that no one could penetrate. And if you could generate space you could reduce space making transit tunnels that could reduce travel times around the globe. Is this possible? I don't know. Since space is made out of multiple definitions of area of compressions it may be possible.

Energy enough to last us through multiple lifetimes:

I'm sorry. You can't live in the 19th century forever. That's the era of cars and lights and the burning of fossil fuels. It's time to come forward and actually plan our cities and allow people to have their dreams. Whoever it was that stated that the only purpose of our lives was to live to support foreign bankers has to

be shown the exit door to this country. I would rather be broke than be a slave to foreign interests.

Think about it. One lightning bolt can power a house for a year. Do we have an energy crisis or do we have a management crisis? It has already been proven that super-conductors can hold vast amounts of power. Are we working toward developing this? No, we're afraid we are going to offend someone. Someone will get a lawsuit started. Someone at the Legion of Other Nations will start complain about us. The talking TV heads will start spinning their stories and politician will start pocketing their favors. And none of this will be toward your advantage.

According to this theory the potential energy stored between the matter and antimatter particles making up the electron could provide all of our energy needs for the foreseeable future. A simple AA battery could power a car for life! In fact I think it's time to start building NCC - 1701. But as you can guess, I'm a dreamer.

I am sorry. There is a whole future here but you have to grab it, it won't be given to you. There is more than enough energy to power your dreams but you have to do more than just play computer games to get it. If you want a future you have to fight for it. Make your demands heard and then start to fight for change. And don't trust the politicians, EVER! Having the foxes guard the hen house is never a good idea. They have their own agenda in mind.

If I live long enough I write another book about them.

Book 2 Chapter 7: The Vision

I had said that I have come to the end of my quest and have reached a vision so profound and so enormous and so simple that it has taken my breath away. Now at the end I'll share this vision. It's simple of course, that's what makes it so hard.

One of the crowning achievements was the Hubble's Telescope view of one of the darkest area of the sky to reveal an almost infinite number of galaxies; more stars than people could visit in one hundred million years. More than enough room to play.

I had this nagging question in the back of my mind. If particles are moving then their centers are moving. But their centers are infinite in size so how could the centers move? They would be moving faster than the speed of light. So it finally hit me that the centers are not moving, in fact they had never moved. Not since the time of the Big Bang. So how can the outsides move but not the insides? Space came from inside of the subspaces.

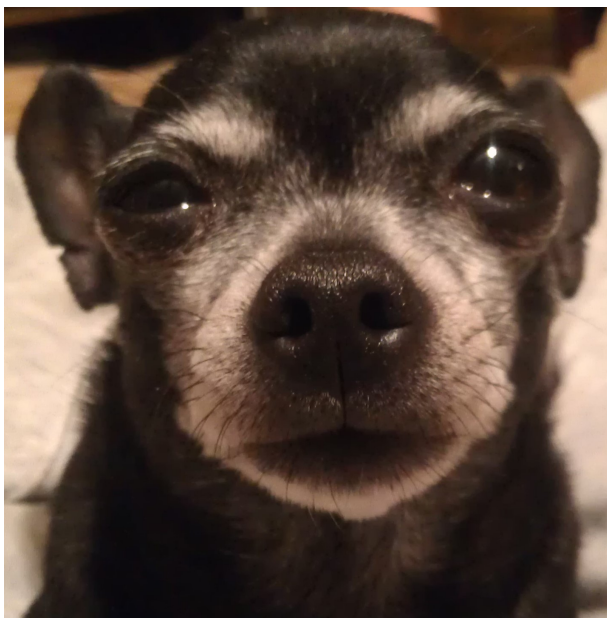
The movements are all derived from the interactions of the elementary particles composed of these subspaces. They're fixed but the space between them is moving. It may in fact only be one center to all of the particles but notice how alive everything is. Everything is pulsating with energy, everything is in movement.

The model came from Einstein's General Theory of Relativity where he presents gravity as a curved space-time. I've modified this vision slightly by adding a real fourth dimension and allowed time to follow the light. This gives us a whole different view of the universe. We expected a time axis to freeze all motion like a film where each frame is a snapshot in time and motion only occurs with the rolling of the film. Instead here everything is moving, nothing is static; here there is life.

Now you know the truth. You know where the center of the universe is. Inside every particle, inside every light particle, inside every life there's the center of the universe. And

whether the universe is infinite or the size of your hand is unimportant. It's what's inside of you that's important.

Biology Revisited Intelligence Within



Forward to Book 3: Biology Revisited - Intelligence Within

From the Book “Theory of Ubiquity”

What do I say? I didn't like the approach of modern physics so I came up with a different concept; one that didn't use Object Oriented Attribute assignment at its heart. And then I added this book about life in answer to Ben Stein's movie Expelled and the next book contains thoughts about immortality and the Human Spirit. The underlining theme of this series “Theory of Ubiquity” is that existence connects all things; a relatively simple concept but one that is not the center of current scientific thinking.

This is my attempt to bring this concept back to the center and in doing so to rethink all of our theories and concepts on how we view the universe, our world, and ourselves. And I will keep this book religion free because this series is about discovery and I do not wish to step on anyone's dogma.

What is the case for intelligence? This appears to be a strange question but it is in fact the one that started me down this path almost forty years ago. This is all the result of me being mad over someone's book as I was trying to decipher Einstein's Theory of Relativity. His comment of "Don't try to understand it; simply use the math" has stuck in my insides ever since. I wanted to prove him wrong. Unfortunately we don't live very long and forty years is a long time for a rebuttal.

So what is the case for intelligence? It's in the subspace. It's distributed across space and time just like matter. It's more than just Entropy in Thermodynamics. Life comes from within and everything is alive. So come investigate this book and see a whole new view of the universe.

But again let me offer a warning first before we enter. There is a war of words between people who believe in "Intelligent Design" versa those who believe in Darwin's "Theory of Evolution." And wisdom always dictates that it is better to stay out of other people's

battles. However the truth is right in the middle. Both sides are right and they cannot see it. So bring your battle gear.

And I will keep this book religion free not because I don't have my own beliefs but because I want to keep this book as useful as possible for people and I don't want to step on other's beliefs.

Lastly I wish to thank my wife who encouraged me to make this book. I could not have done it without her.

David Butterworth, Earth 2008

Book 3 Chapter 1: The Nature of Space and Life

We have gained insight into the nature of space. And we have touched upon the interactions of subspaces within the universe with the effects of gravity, electromagnetic, and nuclear forces. But we have not talked about life and intelligence.

On the simplest level life is the ability to respond to a surrounding environment and to effect this environment. In many ways it is like a chemical reaction responding to heat, pressure and containment. But the beauty of life is that it builds upon itself, order on top of order in increasing complexity, not only within a creature but between creatures until the whole world is covered in order and complexity. How?

The currently held concept is that of randomly occurring events. Every now and again an event gets it right (no definition of what right is) and continues to happen. And even stranger is that mistakes never happen, or that

they occur in such a way that they don't leave a record.

This is quite strange. It is like piling gears and clock faces onto a heap and receiving perfectly made clocks as a result. Course the clocks are reproducing so you only have to make one that works and it will carry on. The question is then where are all the clock pieces and why aren't more clock pieces continuing to fall upon us? I expect to find fossilize hands and feet in the Earth. Yes, I know, it's a silly argument.

But here's the mistake we make with Darwin's Theory of Evolution. We have a take it or leave it concept. You are either for it or against it. We didn't do that with Newton's ideas. His concepts worked but the universe was not as simple as he imagined it to be. Space was not flat space. So concepts have to change and they have to match the evidence.

So is it possible on what we now know about space and time to have something beyond a stimulus / response concept of life? As the

theory currently sits everything has a "lowest energy" / "maximum entropy" rule governing chemical reactions. This is an ordering but it is not life. Life is more complicated. Life uses the laws of Physics but it does not break them. But whatever footholds it can use, it will. Imagine flying dinosaurs. Life is entirely different.

So what is the simplest way to define life that would make sense at the sub-atomic level? Hasn't that been our main confusion? I am a person and I am made up of parts, organs, systems, processing centers and the like all of which are highly organized and are themselves made out of parts. These parts are made out of cells and these cells have parts. And these parts are alive. Where do we cross the line of parts being alive having non-living parts like atoms and molecules? Is there a dividing line where order becomes a simple chemical reaction? You see this is the real question. People are trying to treat everything as a chemical reaction and the order is dismissed as accidental. Actually the order is everything!

To dismiss order is exactly like dismissing Galileo's discovery of the moons orbiting Jupiter. It didn't fit with the concept of Celestial Spheres holding everything in place over the earth (center of the universe). Put the man under house arrest who dare question what everyone knows to be true. Now you know why I keep such a low profile.

But the truth is there is a gathering of orders exactly like the gathering of subspaces in the world we see. And this ordering has to have an awareness of the ordering at all the different levels like the interconnection forces at all the different layers. And awareness builds on awareness just like order builds on order.

So now we are coming to a change in concept that no one wants to see. If life is distributed then no life is unique since all life affects all life. It is exactly like saying all energy is distributed and no energy is unique since all energy affects all energy. And as energy is transmitted from particle to particle so is life transmitted from being to being (awareness and order).

Book 3 Chapter 2: Awareness and Order

So we are back at the sub-atomic level looking at the concepts of awareness and order. And a single subspace is infinite space in a region of space. And inside of this space is the dot connecting definition of virtual light. But the dot connecting definition is showing us something else as well. From the outside "normal world" view it appears as virtual light. What does it appear like inside of the subspace? It is awareness; it's the word "is". "Is" is traveling at infinite speed across infinite distance defining what is. And what is the awareness of? The awareness is of the outside boundary, that place where the boundary of the infinite space stops. And since we see that the boundaries can be fixed at one time and move at another time, then awareness can be fixed at one time and can also change. And for a single subspace "dark matter" that is where the description ends. But for matter / anti-matter the description becomes a lot more complicated.

An elementary particle made out of two

subspaces has two centers of awareness, the ring and the line. This is very significant and is the key to biology. The ring is the awareness of the outside influences. The line is the inner awareness of what is happening across time since time is moving down the area of compression. And of course one affects the other. This is stimulus / response at the most elemental level. And of course at this level it is no more than a chemical reaction, the change of energy by the use of forces.

The key of life is when multiple particles come together in an orderly existence with an awareness of their environment. In other words the awareness and the order are combined across the particles. How is this possible? Part of the answer is shown with Quantum Mechanics. Electrons become part of the atom that they orbit. The inner awareness becomes combined up and down the time axis.

It seems strange that we have difficulty in accepting that things can have a reality within. But we have no problem in making magnets

out of metals by aligning their fields so they reinforce each other instead of canceling each other out. Instead of aligning the magnetic fields we are aligning the reality within, i.e. the awareness. And the awareness is an awareness of the order and the order is an ordering of the awareness. Both are required.

Book 3 Chapter 3: Elementary Particle Awareness

What is the awareness of an elementary particle, one that is made up of a line and a ring? It is going to see the universe, i.e. the area of compression, as a sphere-like object that tapers to a point on the top and bottom of the object. Now don't lose me here, this shook me to my very core. The view is wrapped around the object so the view is back to the regular x, y, z coordinate where 0, 0, 0 marks the center of the chart; what we call regular space. Remembering in singularity space the closer the parabola (area of compression) is to the directrix, the larger the corresponding circle on the sphere-like object. This is because singularity space has infinitely at its heart and is smaller on the outsides. If it extends all the way to infinitely then the outsides would be infinitely small.

Going back to the electron model we see an interesting effect. Now I agree an electron is a simple object yet all of our "modern" technology depends upon the electron for

energy transport, communication and computing. The two matter particles are rotating around the anti-matter particle at the time equals now period. Each of these particles would have awareness within. But as we move up and down the time scale we see a quantum mechanics blended particle that's matter but is a lot smaller than either of these elemental particles. And this makes sense since the directrixes are smeared by the ring subspaces. The smearing of the matter and anti-matter particles are counter-acting each other.

The awareness would be different too. The matter and anti-matter awareness is only for a certain period across the now mark of $W=0$. The blended electron has two areas of awareness, one in the immediate past and one in the immediate future on either side of the matter and anti-matter awareness. What is the awareness of the past and future? The awareness of the past is knowledge and the awareness of the future is foreknowledge. It knows the result of what will happen in the

immediate future. Remember this is the realm of quantum mechanics that has a set of possibilities with a probability assigned to each outcome. We are just loading the dice a bit.

But now I have to tell you what hit me so hard. We are mapping the known universe (area of compression) onto singularity space which causes awareness. As things combine the awareness combines. I know that electrons combine with atoms and atoms with molecules. I am not sure how the awareness combines after that but I know it's a result of order and organization in the cells. Then I folded my arms and started to look around. Everything that I can see and hear is being provided by cells in my body, to my mind, to me. The awareness of the information is being provided to me and I am seeing it as an image. It strikes me as being very similar to what I just described.

**I AM THAT THREE DIMENSIONAL
VIEW AT THE EDGE OF SINGULARITY
SPACE!**

Book 3 Chapter 4: The Ordering of Life

The definition of life is its ability to obtain order. It is almost exactly opposite than Maxwell's Entropy. A cell is extremely complex down to the molecular level. Where did the order come from?

From the human viewpoint we put order into things. That is how machines exist. We place order into the parts of a machine that behave per the laws of physics to perform some special function. There is no awareness involved on the parts of the machine and we have to maintain it so it works orderly. Cells don't work that way, they maintain themselves.

Order has to come from the awareness and the awareness is at the quantum mechanics level. In the field of biology we like to dissect things. But that only shows the current form; the being that exists around the time equals now layer. But awareness exists across time and so is the structure of life and this structure is very complicated. The time structure is very large with 1 nanosecond equaling one foot. Cells

that are very small in space are very large in the time axis. What this provides is functionality.

Take a look at the human eye. All of the cells of the eye have their own functionality. They have their DNA roadmaps, their ability to take nourishment from the blood, and to perform their individual functions. The rod cells detect intensity and the cone cells detect colors. The muscles around the lens focus the image and the iris adjusts the brightness. This structure is not just three dimensional. Each function extends across time connecting with each other. Functions of functions or, as it is known in the engineering field, a system.

So from the outside we see a very complicated system. But from the inside we see an entity; the eye is an eye. There is awareness here; there is life here.

Now the eye is a part of the body. It has its function as the ear has its function. All of the cells comes together to make an organism which is an independent separate being. But is

it? We depend upon each other. We are dependent upon plants for oxygen and food just like the plants are dependent upon us for carbon dioxide. We are all interconnected with the rest of the world into one living entity.

Please I am not trying to step on toes. I am not talking about God. I am talking about something more complicated than us that we are a part of. You can give it any name you want but it is important to know that there are connections and we as a species cannot survive outside of nature any more than an eye can exist outside of the body. Despite all of its functionality, it will die. Just consider this a wake-up call.

Book 3 Chapter 5: Distributed Intelligence

This is the case of distributed intelligence where intelligence exists at each level of life. It does not say that everything was design from a supreme being (intelligent design) although it is not against having a supreme being. And it is not saying that everything happens by chance and only the strongest survive (Darwin's Theory of Evolution) although chance and evolution has a big part to play in life. Life is far more complicated than anyone has given it credit. And our simplistic ideas are just showing our stupidity and not much else. We love to fight each other even when there is no reason to do so.

Life is about growth, not destruction. Life is being a part of the ecosystem you're in, providing and receiving from this system; it is not about destroying and dominating the ecosystem. And it is my idea that life is about communication. Communication is the method of sharing awareness and order between people. It may be that communication is actually like

electromagnetic light. Both the virtual light and the electromagnetic light are related to the spinning of the subspace. Life like energy is transferred across space on the area of compression.

Now the rules of Quantum Mechanics apply to life just like it applies to energy. Life comes in bursts. Life is absorbed by an organism, it holds it for a while, and it is retransmitted again. There may be higher life states just like there are higher energy states. There is a whole lot more than we know.

I would like to make a case in redefining the definition of light. The virtual light of the subspace is the stage one light. What we call light is actually life and is the stage two light. The stage two light is made from the stage one light. Lastly there is a stage three light that is made from the stage two light. We call this light love although it also goes by the name of glory.

Book 3 Chapter 6: Simple Machines

We have been making simple machines that have no life within them. They have order but no awareness within. When they are "out of order" they have to be fixed. Can biology be copied so self-reproducing machine that have life be made that can repair themselves?

And if we can make machines that have awareness do we treat its life as sacred like we do our own? Or are we going to become hardened and start to treat all life as not important, only something to be used, like energy.

And if we use life, what is the purpose? Is it only for individuals to war against each other, for everyone to dominate each other, to steal from each other? When cells in the body fight each other we call it a disease. If the disease isn't fought the body will die. I sometimes doubt that we realize how serious our situation is.

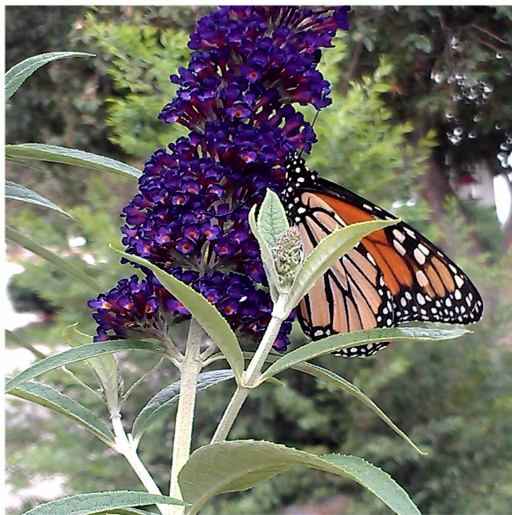
Book 3 Chapter 7: In Conclusion

There is more to biology then what is provided here. There is probably no field more complicated. And I hope that others will review, add to, and modify the thoughts given here. And if we consider that life is not an accident but is an ordering on top of matter then the possibility of finding life in the universe has greatly increased.

Here's to the future.

Human Spirit Revisited

Inner Vision, Outer Hope



Forward to Book 4: Human Spirit Revisited - Inner Vision, Outer Hope

From the Book “Theory of Ubiquity”

Are we important? This is the question raised in the previous section and it requires an answer here. The 20th century was known for the greatest carnage in the history of mankind and the beginning of the 21st century appears to be headed in the same direction. This is despite the fact of having great advantages in knowledge and technology where the needs of all of the people could be met. We have a hope here of climbing out of this trap into a glorious new future, where we could provide life and hope to everyone around us. A future of adventure, of worth, of honor greater than any we had known before. A time where love dominates

But I need to issue a warning first before we enter. These are my thoughts concerning our inward nature. I am going to make my attempt here to be honest as I can but it may not be the words that you want to hear. And I will keep

this religion free for the reasons given before but I don't recommend keeping your life religion free.

If we want to survive, there has to be a change of heart; our motivations and nature has to change. But to have a change of heart requires a change of life, our illumination of who we are and what we are has to change. And this requires us to open our eyes to truths that we may not want to see but have to see. Have to see if we want to survive.

David Butterworth, Earth 2008

Book 4 Chapter 1: Introduction

The scientists of this current age will not accept that people have inner thoughts; only electrical currents and chemical flows across the surface of the brain. For them there is no reality within, any inward awareness, much less a concept like spirit. But we know people have spirit because we can see it in their accomplishments, in their struggles and dreams. In other words what we see in people is more spiritual than physical.

What is spirit? It is the look in the eye and the smile on the lips. It something that we cannot measure but we know it has to be there. No wax figure or robot can mimic it. What is the spirit of a human being? It is the essence of what we are and how we affect the physical universe.

Book 4 Chapter 2: The Essence of What We Are

I have to start with a paradox. It is my belief that all scientific inquiry will end in paradoxes for the simple reason that you cannot put God in a box. And even though you thought that I have been careful to leave God out of the previous sections He is still there in the concept of a point of infinite space. The very heart of the definition of awareness and energy for a point of infinite space is a paradox; a point is space-less. This is a point where our intelligence cannot enter.

Now I need to stretch you further. There is a lot of room in the point that I am going to make now. That point is where we live. We know about the universe and our bodies, but our actual home is that point of infinite space, the point that we cannot comprehend. We are part of this world but we are infinitely away from this world. That is because our view of our body is from the inside looking out.

And I am not saying that we are God but there

could be a whole structure here that we just perceive as a dot. It is infinitely far away. But if you ever wanted to know if you are important realize that you, the very essence of you, the infinitely small spark within, is the miracle of this world, indeed of the whole universe.

I am coming to the essence of the argument now. We are another paradox. We are at the edge of God looking at a Godless universe but God has no limits, he is everywhere and in everything. But He is limited by our disbelief. Our hard hearts can stop His mercy and grace from flowing in our lives. Our lies can hide His truths but only from ourselves. We are presumptuous, self-willed, despising authority, loving our flesh over everything else. And yet we can be so much more. Imagine, we can define where the edge of God is in our life and the lives around us. We can extend the universe. Do you have needs? God can meet them. Do you need answers? God can provide them. There is no limit to God.

So what we need to know is the truth without

stepping on anyone's beliefs.

Book 4 Chapter 3: The Truth

Some people believe in nothing, some in a name, some in an institution, some in a friend, and some in an angry god who wants to punish the world. Very few believe in themselves realizing that God wants to live through us.

So how do we start? By starting; by relying on faith, hope, and love. God will give the increase if the effort is given to him and is done through him. How is this done; back in the insides, in your prayer time. And it seems funny but there is not a soul on this planet who doesn't know what I am talking about. It just the fact that many don't practice this, but some do or we would have never have lasted this long.

Our mistake is that we think that wealth and fulfillment is the same thing. In many cases it's the opposite. Many people have sold out for money, turning their back on their family, their dreams, on the thing that they know in their heart that God wants them to do. They have become a slave to money and it has left

them bankrupt. Why? Money is external; there's no life in it. It is not like blood in the body that is alive. The blood provides oxygen, food, heat, removes waste and provides for the cells. We treat money as the same function but it is not. We are not connected together because money is not alive.

Creativity, wisdom, happiness comes from within where our heart is. And it is communications from our heart that connects us. It is inspirations from the heart that drives our accomplishments. So my next book will be about the heart and how we are supposed to live.

Book 4 Chapter 4: In Conclusion

Now that we know that in our divine spark lives the power and majesty of God, how do we live? If you hurt someone you are hurting yourself. If you help someone you are helping yourself. If you believe in stealing, killing and destruction then you have separated yourself from the rest of your fellow beings and joined yourself with someone you shouldn't be associated with. Our lives should be connected with faith, hope, and love more than anything else. And if we bring anything into the 21st century, it should be that.

One last point I wanted to give in this 2011 update. I am the conscience mind. I sit between the sub-conscience mind and the super-conscience mind in much the same way that normal space sits between two subspaces. The subspaces are infinite but the normal space between them is not. This mind is in part the brain but it is a lot more. It's the soul between the spirits.

Spirits are like the wind; it's the very essence

of the subspace theory, the virtual light. We have a nature that governs our earth based existence; beyond the running of the heart, the breathing, the protection of our bodies. We also have our emotions, our memories, the fears and foibles of our interactions with the world and the people around us. We have locked parts of ourselves away in emotions that we do not want to face, situations that have no answers. But we also have a nature that governs our heaven based nature; either heaven or hell based upon our essence.

This is an ordering on top of life, a third stage of existence. And it is not just humans that have it. Animals have it as well with fear, contentment, anger, love shown in the same ways as people.

Now animals stay true to their nature, people don't. And it's true that that our spiritual nature changes more than animals; we laugh and cry more than our cousins. We have seen the greater good and bad.

When I was around 50 I had an experience that

I wish to share. It was very quick, it happened at work; with a number of people standing around who never even knew that anything happened to me. I was very frustrated, stuck in a job where I was supposed to do nothing but stare at the wall. I know it sounds like a dream job why was I frustrated? But you have to know me. I use to say that my job was to do nothing and I did nothing well. The job eventually grew to become very important, very challenging, and I had the respect of those around me. But back then I was frustrated and then the universe opened up. At one moment I was a spark of awareness, alone, living in a body, scratching an existence in a world that didn't care whether I and my family lived or died. The next moment the world was gone and I was a drop of water in an ocean, an ocean of joy; of such infinite joy that I cannot explain it. Incredible joy, like nothing I have ever experienced in the world. And then it closed again and everything was as it was. But I will never be the same again.

I share this because I am one of many who

have seen things but rational people are trying to dismiss all evidence that doesn't meet their preconceived view of the universe. I am glad that I am irrational; their view of the universe is way too small.

The Heart of the Universe

Life for the Oppressed



Forward for Book 5: The Heart of the Universe, Life for the Oppressed

A deceit has crept into our thinking that has taken the life out of our society, our sciences, our religions, and our very souls. It has embedded itself in our speech, taken over our institutions, and has destroyed any hope for a sustainable, rewarding future. And while I know that the dead never knows that they're dead, I want to make a case for life. I want you to have faith in God.

We have confused imaginary and real existence. For an example in the field of optics you can have real images (those that have light bouncing off objects) and virtual images (those that have the same convergence of rays as a real image but the actual object doesn't exist). And these images look exactly the same until you perform a close examination.

Real existence comes from the heart. Imaginary existence comes from the head. One is life and the other is a simulation of life.

And you need both of them to harness faith, hope and love as well as fear, despair and hate. So the question is concerning our goal; are we headed toward life or are we headed toward death? And the answer to this question determines the type of future that we will have and the future our children will have to face. You have to change your heart and change your thinking if you want to change your future and this can only happen if you are changed by God. You have to be reborn on the inside. No one on the outside can help you with this; it's between you and God. And knowledge can help you with this process.

It is the goal of this book to give you an alternative to hopelessness, to bring clarity in place of confusion, to bring purpose back into your life. And it will do this by providing real knowledge to change your life, issuing in a new age that will be based upon truth. And this new age will be totally different than any age we have ever seen before.

Instead of living in the world of fantasy here's a reality that far and exceeds anything that has

been dreamt by people. A future without hunger, a future without war, where the sciences advance and everyone has an equal chance at life, at education, at energy and technology.

A new beginning is tied to a fresh concept. That is the entire purpose of this book, to introduce you to the heart of the universe. And although this is a simple concept, it's completely different than any concept that you've had before concerning the reality within. The universe has a heart just like you, and when two hearts touch everything changes.

Very soon, we will be free. And what we accomplish with this freedom will directly affect our children future for multiple generations. So to prepare for that day we need to start a training program. And this training needs to be free, free without cost, free to all people, free to grow as people contribute new ideas, free to live beyond the controls of organization committees or boards. And in this training we will find life. Start

with the details given in this book but don't let it end there. The future is calling will you answer?

And if you have faith I am asking you to stretch it by reading this book. And note this: keep your religion, however you understand it to be. Instead of each of us trying to change each other's religion, we have to be still and find God within ourselves.

New day, new set of rules.

David Butterworth Earth 2011

Book 5 Chapter 1: Changing Our Direction

It is my intent that we move into a new renaissance age where we can contribute to the arts, to the sciences, to the technology to the maximum of our gifting and desire. And in this section of my philosophy I want to propose a new society where we are allow to grow where our dreams take us and be rewarded for our contributions.

Unfortunately our society is the very opposite of this vision despite all of the commentary to the contrary. Right now we are not free; we are controlled by those who have the money to affect our lives, our opinions, and our very future. And we work for those people, both industrial and government, suppressing our dreams, burying our desires, generation after generation, slowly losing our neighbor society, our innovation spirit, our very identity. Our children will become their slaves, serfs for the nobles, with no rights, no history, and no importance.

We cannot allow this to continue. We can

fight this and stop it in its track if we follow the few simple concepts that I'll give you here. But this is going to be a shocking revelation since it's a wake-up call. Most people don't know that they have been lulled to sleep through the boredom that came from their enslavement. A great many are in the sleep of death where they can never be awakened. They will go through their daily routines but they will not watch a sunrise, listen to the birds sing, or give each other the gifts of love. And it's possible that most of the older generation, my generation, are now lost but it's time to start to protect the young.

In the following chapters I will reveal hidden truths and expose existing lies. In doing this I'm afraid I will hurt a lot of people. I would rather just talk to the young at this point and keep this book as a secret between us. Allow the older generations to keep their delusions. However I'm afraid I wasn't given this choice and the time is very short.

So first I need to give you the truth about

yourselves. You are not who you think you are; you're more. So in the next chapter I'll talk about the reality within; revelation knowledge. Then in the following chapters I will identify three main lines of thoughts that have to be severed if our society is to experience a new renaissance. One is the scientific concept of a godless universe, an atheist's heaven. This is an idea which has been used to justify people's actions for the last hundred years. It is the thought that there is no life but the present life and no future than the one you are living right now. Another thought is the religious concept of people doing God's will through their own actions. This idea has been around for thousands of years where only a few people speak for God. The faithful do the bidding of the few to guarantee that they can live in the next life. The third thought concerns the self-promoters; the spiritualists who deal with angels and devils for their own selfish ends. This includes

bankers, business managers, politicians, world leaders, and various others who know what I am talking about. These are people who have taken ideas from above to suppress people below. They have taken the sciences of economics and sociology, the institutions of banks and courts, and the authority of the rich nobility and government officials to create a new world of complications and separations for the general population. Here people have no life at all unless they are one of the insiders, one of the self-promoters.

And if you are one of these people read this book with trembling hands. For all of these actions have the same purpose, removing God from His creation. Keeping the truth about Gods love away from His people and thereby control us for your own selfish ends.

Book 5 Chapter 2: Finding the Heart to Continue

We are beings of the sixth day that have been called to live in the seventh day. Not all of us have been called and fewer will enter. You have to give up everything to enter. To know God you have to trade your life for His. You have to leave this world and live in the world of Heavenly Wonders. This is where you are right now, where you are running your bodies from, but you don't know it. Truth is you don't want to know it. You want to enjoy this world and experience life. But in the end you will detest your pains and will experience death. This world is only beautiful when you have beauty to offer to it, and this beauty has to come from within.

Most people are content to live life as they find it. They find an occupation, earn a living, finding joy where they can, raise a family, and try to be happy. This is good and it's all in the 6th day but there is another day, the 7th day, where God is located. He has sanctified that day and blessed it and has asked us to enter in.

But when you enter in you leave the 6th day behind. Not your obligations of course, you're still married, still a parent. It's your viewpoint that you leave behind.

I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ live(s) in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Galatians 2:20 KJ

And, since there are always ones that reasons to the extreme, don't think that this is about killing your body; you need your body here in the 6th day. This is about love. Like two lovers who lose themselves in each other's eyes. They are still individual people but their lives have mixed. They don't live for themselves anymore, they live for each other. Their unity is greater than either one alone.

Everything in this world has a purpose and that includes you. But to see your purpose requires having the right perspective. And the right perspective's is God's. It's hard to see God's

perspective however, it is selfless. Everyone else comes first; the exact opposite of a selfish attitude that seems to dominate civilization today. I know that it doesn't seem sensible. It looks totally debilitating however it is just the opposite. The center of the universe is within you. It is infinitely large but it looks infinitely small. It is hard to find, you have to look for it with a great perseverance. Even then it must chose you because you can only get close and your closest approach is still millions of light years off target. The only way is to give up yourself. Remembering that what we say is who we are. Our words are a flow of our spirit. So if His words are in you and you are in Him, only then, is there a connection deep inside.

God is the heart of the universe. And when God lives in our heart then our heart and the universe heart becomes one with God. We live differently because we are not fighting against the universe anymore; we're part of the universe. And we have confidence in our heart that everything will turn out all right. And as

the trees dance in the wind so do we dance in the spirit, a celebration of life.

But what says it? The word is close (to) you, even in your mouth, and in your heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; That if you shall confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in your heart that God has raised him from the dead, you shall be saved. For with the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture says, Whosoever believes on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

Romans 10:8-13 KJ

This is independent of your religion. This is a one on one relationship with the All Mighty. I am not asking you to give up your religious convictions. I am asking you to give up yourself. For you to affect anything in your town or village you have to have a personal

relationship with God. And you have to enter into His peace today. You must enter His peace through faith or risk rejection.

Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us (of entering into his rest), any of you should seem to come short of it. For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. For he spoke in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest. Seeing therefore it remains that some must enter in it, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: Again, he limits a certain day, saying in David, Today, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts. For if Joshua had given them rest, then would he not

afterward have spoken of another day. There remains therefore a rest to the people of God. For he that is entered into his rest, he also has ceased from his own works, as God did from his. Let us labor therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief. For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not a high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted just as we are, yet without sin. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

Hebrews 3:7 to 4:16 KJ

Now we see a mystery of God revealed. God has rested from doing His own works and instead is responding to us. Likewise we have to stop doing our own work and we need to respond to him. That is the miracle of God revealed to us. Every step in God's creation is about separating and rejoining. That is where the angels work; in the Yin-Yang of creation. It's neither in the total separation nor in the reunion because those are featureless states; simple identities. It's in the rich mixture of colors and sounds of reality reacting with reality. And here in the 7th day there are two sides reacting with each other's; we are the one side and God is the other. We're the Yin and God is the Yang. Even the Taijitu symbol shows the heart of each side is the other complementary opposite. For this to work God must live in our heart and we must live in His heart. This must have been the plan all along; too bad we have been too busy to spend time with God. We had too many things occupying our time, too many treasures to obtain. And all of our struggles have led to what? A dying Earth, the total elimination of

most of the animal species, continuous war, displaced people, crooked governments, crashing economies, bad credit reports, and infomercials. Maybe, just maybe, we should trust God and lay aside all of our burdens and find our rest with God.

And I never understood before why so many bad things happened, why so many evils were allowed to exist. God could have easily have corrected all of this, but He won't do it alone. Something that we don't understand but we need to trust God in; to do anything in our own strength, by our own will, only generate evil in the 7th day. What you do in fellowship with God generates good. You have to call on the Lord for help; you have to have faith that God can help you. You have to ask for grace and mercy. Understand this, if you even have the smallest of faith, the faith the size of a mustard seed, with God you can move mountains.

And this is not saying that your life will be without grief and losses. The Lord himself had grief and He did not get all of His wishes fulfilled. But He will stand with you and help

you in your grief. And yes; prayer changes things! Faith can move mountains, but only in unity with God's purpose. Only with God's grace can you ever survive this world.

And here's the reason for the balance, for the Yin-Yang approach. If God dictated everything that happened on the earth then we would be no more than puppets. God does not want robots, He wants people; those that have the reality within. Robots are just flat, earth only creatures that no internal depth, no reality within. Where we messed things up is when we didn't center our hearts on Him. We lost our depth and the whole Yin-Yang structure fell apart. And that is why bad things happened. If you don't have a relationship with God, you're going to have a relationship with the devil.

Look at this as an example. People tend to make things complicated; it's part of our nature. God makes things simple, so between God and His people there's a balance, a Yin-Yang affect. But instead people are taking their complexity to the devil and the devil only

has three responses; stealing, destruction, and/or murder. So that becomes the end results of our complications, of our money funds accounts, international trade agreements, political lobbying, business mergers, church doctrine, courtroom decisions, anyplace where there is the fog of war.

We have been given the Kingdom of God where God will partner with you so your needs will be met, so you can find the right way to live. This is where God enlarges the passageway between Heaven and Earth so that you do not have to be perfect to see God's grace, a passageway needed by all of us. We have been given a period of grace where God accepts us into Heaven here on Earth where we can commune with God and learn His righteousness.

Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, How shall we be clothed? (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. But seek you first the kingdom of God, and his

righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Matthew 6:31-33 KJ

And it is important to note that we need God but He is truthful. He will not give the falsities of good manners. God can't lie. So to know God is to know the truth as painful as that can be, it can be a good thing. Allow God to change you. God will give you revelation knowledge. That is knowledge that goes to your spirit bypassing your mind. And once you have it you keep it forever. It is knowledge that you know that you know, it's the snap of the fingers, eyes opening, "of course" revelation that you can build your life on. And most people will not seek this knowledge but will settle for the intellectual knowledge instead; not to know god but to only know about god. There is no power, no Yin-Yang in intellectual knowledge. If you want to change the world you have to know God, you have to love God. It is only through love that you touch and you surrender to Him.

And don't turn from God or the following will happen.

And Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. And in process of time it came to pass, that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the LORD. And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering: But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell. And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him.

Genesis 4:2-8 KJ

Here's the craziness of our world that you know as well as I. Cain didn't kill Able. Cain

entertained sin and sin's desire took over Cain and killed Able. And Cain paid the price for that murder. Sin will continue to break all of the Ten Commandments until we put God first and foremost in our lives.

But I need to stress this point. Cain's offering was rejected by God and Cain went off in pride. He didn't humble himself and try to understand God's viewpoint. He didn't tell his brother congratulations. He could have shared in Able's offering, livestock likes fruits and wheat. He could have started raising cattle and had his own offering. No he was mad and someone had to pay. So how are you going to react when God rejects your offering? Do you think He's pleased with all of the religions around the world at war with each other? Do you think He's happy with greed and selfishness? How about turning a blind eye to poverty and death? You need to be honest with yourself; this is going to hurt. In fact you need to humble yourself to the fact that you won't recover from this hurt, it's going to kill you. You won't be you; you will be a part of

Him. And as the world rejected Him, they'll reject you. The war has started and you are in the enemy's camp. There is no middle ground now. You cannot live for God and live in the world once the latter rains start. God's presence will be too strong in your life. Your eyes will give you away. Be strong in the Lord and reject evil. Wash it off and let it go down the drain. Cease from your works and find His peace and live there. Do what He ask you to do and He will do what you ask of Him. That is the future age.

Book 5 Chapter 3: The Case against Atheism

There is an argument that has been taught in our classrooms as truth for decades now that I need to come against. That is the argument that there is no God and that our lives have no purpose. Life is the accidental accumulation of events of chemical reactions that made living cells and from the cells living organisms; in which you and I are a part. And because of this we are to live our lives the best we can, taking every advantage, fulfilling every pleasure because we only have today. It is like Shakespeare's play Macbeth.

“Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player that struts and frets his hour upon the stage and then is heard no more: it is a tale told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing.”

Shakespeare Macbeth Act 5 Scene 5.

This argument is based on a flat universe; one in which interactions only occur in the physical dimensions and in no other. Thus

thought, beauty, and all of the attributes of the spirit are illusions; made up by the cells to pretend that we were real, that an entity running the body actually existed. But why? And for the cells to plan like this required that each of them would have to have parts that pretended that the cells had individual entities that could discuss and plan. This view is impossibly complicated. And it doesn't answer the question on how life started or even identifies what a viewpoint is. It just pretends that the question is irrelevant to the nature of the universe.

I like to get the scientific atheists mad and talk about Galileo. He dared to question the universe of Celestial Spheres holding the stars and planets in place as they revolved around the earth. He made a telescope, the first ever, looked at Jupiter and saw moons rotating around Jupiter. That wasn't the way things worked and when he discussed it they dragged him before the pope, had a quick trial, and placed him under house arrest for the rest of his life. Had the pope been a follower of Jesus

he would have looked through the telescope himself, but that's in the next chapter.

What I am trying to say is that the concept of a lifeless universe (the only life is pretend life) is as limiting as the concept of Celestial Spheres. Imagine a universe smaller than a light-year in diameter. And the Celestial Spheres concepts never work anyway. They never could get the motions of the planets right. Likewise Darwin theories cannot predict the future or the past. There's no evidence of past evolutions or predictions of future evolutions. This is a dead theory. Yes things can change but it doesn't explain life. Let go of the dead weights they're holding you down.

Accept a universe where there are entities that are not seen. Branches of Biology are already doing this when they talk about a cow or a horse. They don't say carbon matter that's pretending to be a cow or a horse; they talk about the entities cow and horse, everything both the seen and the unseen parts. If Biology can do this why not physics. Can an invisible entity affect a physical reaction? Yes it's

called entropy. That is the condition of things going from order to disorder that is one of the chief discovery of thermodynamics. Life is its opposite, life produces order from disorder. Neither one exists on a per particle premise. They only exist between particles across space. To say that only one exists and that the other is an accident is to deny the entire structure of the universe. Everything is based upon the interactions of two opposing sides of the same concept. And the concept here is viewpoint. To see the world from the physical side is entropy, to see the world from the other end of the universe, from the heart, is life.

And this is why life is important. Newton stressed the use of mathematics to describe his formulations that he called the laws of physics. He said that there were no force without an equal opposing force and used vector math to explain his concepts. He did not give math without concepts like many scientists are doing today. The concepts are more important than the math. The other is dead intellectual knowledge without insight, without beauty,

without wonder.

So why do scientists say that there is no God? No experiment could prove or disprove His existence. He is beyond anything He made. It is my thought that this question is beyond their scope.

But I do have a case against those scientists that have an agenda; those that assume a truth and pass it as a truth. And then they work with other to promote their truth as the one and only truth. It's obvious, it's political. Otherwise they would have never admitted that an unborn baby is not alive! More than 300 years of scientific research and experiments proved that life only comes from life, never from non living materials. Life is a continuous flow through time. All babies are alive no matter how young they are. They put agenda over scientific principles.

And because of this agenda people have justified their actions based upon the "proof" that there is no god. Anything that they can do to improve their lot in life even though it hurts

someone else is ok. There is no one watching, no one keeping score, no one to reward good behavior. And it wouldn't matter anyway since there is no heaven or hell and we are all going to go back to the dust that we were created from. Anything and everything is justified since nothing matters. This is the poison that has been injected into modern day living.

It's no wonder that people lose hope when they are taught such hopelessness in our public schools. Honor, love, faith are all meaningless words in this bleak, empty landscape. And the whole point of this is to turn you into a machine; one that will do its master's bidding without question or guilt. This is the very definition of soulless.

Book 5 Chapter 4: The Case against Religious Leaders

It's unbelievable the number of people around the world who are doing their own works for God. This is entirely different than the 7th day interactions where you stop doing your works and instead do the things that God asks you to do. Now many people work for a religious organization sharing the duties and mission of that organization. They care for the needy, the widows, and the orphans. And these people are doing the work of God; they know it in their heart. It's the others that I want to talk about, the ones that know they are doing God's work in their heads.

We know that there are various religions around the world but only one God. And in these religions there are a variety of beliefs different from each other. In the Christian religion I have been to multiple churches that had different kinds of service. I remember the train church. They had a wonderful Sunday school but their service consisted on making train noises. Everyone would make noise,

chuga-chuga sounds, or clap their hands. And of course being there I would do the same. And then the most beautiful music I had ever heard would come forth from a single individual, usually a young woman. The music would take your breath away. Original, sung in the spirit, never to be heard again. It would continue for a few minutes and then it would be picked up by someone else, and it would flow around the church. In that way the church worshiped God and at the end you knew you had worshiped. Other churches that I went to were deep into teaching. I learned a lot in those churches about God through the old and new testaments. Other churches danced in the Spirit, those people were happy to be alive. Other churches were about hope even in rough times. Some pastors walked in faith, others walked in love. Some were defeated, some victorious, but they all had their story to tell.

What are the ways of a person, what are his or her thoughts? That is how a person or even a committee will rule. And when they rule

where is God? Mostly people wrap themselves in holy robes, put on the sweet smelling scent, and pretend to be someone they're not. Their heart is not in it. There are traditions to follow, the past to give homage to. But what is that to God? Your ways come from your heart and your thoughts from your head. If you are stiff necked and hard hearted how are you going to do God's work?

Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near: Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater:

So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it. For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace:

Isaiah 55:5-12 KJ

When you pray to God, when you have a church service, you need to have a guide and that guide must be based upon His word. Many use the bible or the corresponding teaching of their organization. Many use a book of common prayer that was derived from the holy word. And when you worship don't just going through the motion; that is empty praise. And don't just read the words without meaning or feelings; that is dead worship. Allow your hearts to be moved. Allow yourselves to be changed. Allow Him to be the all-powerful living, loving God that can make a real change in people's lives.

Are we sure that people are doing God's work? Most religions participate in the killing, stealing land, torture, or forcible reconversion

of unbelievers that didn't follow exactly the beliefs of that organization. Those that were killed in these religious conflicts are called either martyrs or targets depending upon one's view point. The sole purpose of the Inquisition of the Catholic Church was to install fear in the hearts of the people around the world. Fear is not faith; it's the opposite of faith. It's the opposite of pleasing God. So who were they trying to please?

So how was God removed from His centers of worship? It was through peoples hard hearts and evil thinking, through their ways and thoughts. As the Catholic Church ironically named Pope Innocent III said that anyone that had a personal view of God that is in conflict with Church dogma was to be burned without pity. A personal relationship with God was to be repressed. This is anti-God, anti-7th day, and they are not the only church to do it. Most religions around the world have replaced God with a set of dogma statements. And then they say that the Holy Spirit stopped healing and saving people since the church was

established. What they don't tell you is that they kicked Him out of the service.

When Jesus came into the borders of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am? And they said, Some say that you are John the Baptist: some, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. He says unto them, But whom say you that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed are you, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood has not revealed it unto you, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto you, That you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Matthew 16:13-19 KJ

All these churches have is what they can get

from flesh and blood. They built their house on the sand (their thoughts) and not the rock (God's revelation knowledge). They threw away the very keys that God had entrusted to them to do His work. Only God's revelations can unlock the treasures of your heart or lock the paths to the pride of life. Intellectual knowledge cannot do this.

So are they doing the Lord's work; not in the least. Is God working through these organizations; where He can, when He is not stopped! He still has compassion on His people. Trust me on this, when God comes these organizations will be running for cover.

You hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, This people draws close unto me with their mouth, and honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand: Not that which goes into the mouth defiles a man; but that which comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man.

Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Do you know that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying? But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father has not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they are blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

Matthew 15:7-14 KJ

But there is more to the story. The humble godly leaders are often overrun by the proud, the greedy, people acting under lust. I've seen many people that had good ideas that were not God's that caused failures and heartache. I've been to family run churches that entirely killed the work of the Spirit. I've seen productions numbers, political events, and insurance schemes that had nothing to do with God's message. I've seen the good people driven away and the bad people entrenched. And I've seen a lot of people hurt.

Is this God's church; yes and no. God's people are in it and in many cases God's will is being done, but in the most part no, not like the early

church. In the past people accepted Gods truths to the point that they ready to face death for it. Much like what the Christians are currently facing over in China. Anytime people learn the truth they are hunted by the authorities. The world leaders are afraid of the truth and will do anything to suppress it. This even including reading or having a copy of this book. But we are not alone here. China has also been going against the Buddhist, the educated, the family unit, even against the family pets. Most Muslim countries will kill Christians on sight. But we will talk about these leaders and their actions in the next chapter.

Here's the question; are you willing to give up everything for God? Are you willing to make Him the center of your universe? Are you willing to place everything in God's name? If you are willing to become as innocent as a lamb then be careful of the wolves. There are a lot of people who will take your money in the name of God. There are a lot of people who will put you to work under slavery

condition for God's work. There are even those that promise you martyrdom for the ultimate sacrifice in His name. Be careful, are you following God or man? God will never go against His word. Remember killing, stealing, destruction are the works of the devil.

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be you therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will whip you in their synagogues (churches, and mosques); And you shall be brought before governors and kings (judges, mayors, newspaper reporters, television cameras) for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what you shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what you shall speak. For it is not you that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaks in you.

Matthew 10:16-20 KJ

Here's where the truth is; follow your heart. This age is a terrible age and the savage devils

are making war on the earth. There is no in-between ground anymore; you are either for the world or for God. And the earth's religious institutions that were founded in this middle ground will falter and die because of it. God is for the humble, the innocent, the hard worker, the family unit, even for the family pet. He has His army and they are coming soon at the appointed hour. Hang on to the stillness at the center of your heart. That point cannot be moved. And even if you die you will be victorious.

The latter day rains are coming; the last move of the spirit to reach those people who have rejected God because of what the church and other religious bodies have done. This rain will come down everywhere across all believers. And all will have access to it.

And it shall come to pass in the last days, says God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: And on my servants and on my handmaidens I

will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: And I will show wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapor of smoke: The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and notable day of the Lord come: And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

Acts 2:17-21 KJ Clarified

Book 5 Chapter 5: The Case against the Elite

We've all heard the story of the person who sold their soul to the devil for some advantage like money, or beauty, or even to help someone else. And we all know the outcome of the story, after everything the person desired has turned to dust they realized that what they had traded was the real value and it was now gone forever. Would it surprise you to know that the story is real and many of the elite who are controlling our lives have made this bargain and you are paying the price for it?

Many of them didn't know that it was the devil that they were bartering with. They selected a trade and in the process of paying their dues, the painful interactions with other people (ungodly people teaching corruption), learned the rules of the game, how to manipulate people, how to steal and twist ideas, how to join forces with the winning side, how to conquer and destroy, how to rule, how to kill. They learned the language: it's only a game, have to break a few eggs to make an omelet,

winner takes all, their luck ran out, mercy is for weaklings; the strong have to be pitiless. They learned the rules: keep a history of all discussions, make the workers responsible for all actions, spread the blame to many people as possible (no one gets in trouble) or if that is not possible make a scapegoat, get the silver bullet (the secrets on your bosses), and always stay on the winning side. They learn the benefits; money, good house in a good neighborhood, money, protection by the police, money, connections to power, and a retirement with lots of money. In most cases they had a happy life, a little empty perhaps, but financially better than the people that slaved under them.

Now let us be honest here, we need to understand this corruption. We are trying to live in the 7th day without God and it's not working. But many people try to live a decent life even in this environment. I want to talk about the ones that don't. We know about the people that are directly in the devil's business; they steal, kill, and destroy. What is not as

obvious are these other people that have sold out for money. In many cases they don't even know themselves that they are doing the devil's work. Instead of working with people and for people, they are manipulating people to work some other calling. They have placed concepts and society over people, over the centers of reality that exists within us all, over the heart of the universe. You cannot serve God and mammon, which is possessions, riches, stuff; the very same concept where Lucifer fell.

I am talking about three principle institutions that are being manipulated by devils (human and otherwise) that are causing the majority of grief in this world. They are money, laws, and our ruling class. The original starting point of these institutions had to do with people to people interactions. People used money as an exchange for goods and services. People had laws for boundaries of what was theirs versus someone else. There were rulers to settle disputes and keep our lives peaceable. But then these institutions grew to dominate and

control every aspect of our lives, taking our daily earnings, destroying our communities, leaving our families hungry and hopeless. It is in the complication and corruption of these institutions I want to come against.

Now I consider the United States government the fairest in the world. Many governments are just bad men who have risen to the top of their country by killing, stealing, and creating destruction around them. So I am giving my analysis of the best country, one can only imagine how worse my criticism would be of these others. But understand this, what you do to God's children, you do to Him. He takes it personal. Don't think that these actions are going to pass unpunished.

Let's start with the bankers. These are the trusted servants that hold your money for you and keep it safe. Of course they work with your money and invested it into various businesses and homeowners who needed the cash and in return provided you with a healthy additional interest of cash. Give the banks enough warning and they can return your

original investment. And then 80 years ago things changed and banks kept your cash as the economy faltered and the depression hit. But after the war the economy recovered and people started investing their money again, after all that would never happen again. So here we are again with the banks sitting on our money only in this case instead of closing their doors the government gave them more money; hitting us with runaway inflation, devaluing our homes, closing our jobs, and reduced the interest rate to practically zero (no return on investments). During the last depression we had deflation not inflation, what little money people had, they kept.

How is this being done? First the cultural leaders promoted the age of self and a lot of people fell for it. A new age of convenience where there is an infinite variety of labor saving devices to make your life easier. Of course larger houses were needed to put all of the labor saving devices. And new ways to spend your time, to be entertained, educated, enlightened. And we required new things to

own, things of beauty, things of commerce, things of transportation. And all of this cost money. Then they undermined our self-reliance, to keep the economy growing more people had to depend upon more businesses to spend more money. We didn't have our own gardens; we didn't can our own fruits and vegetables. Soon everything we needed cost even more money. But as the cost went up the quality went down and businesses had to consolidate to keep the prices low. The owners became fewer and fewer. The farms were bought by large corporations with fewer types of crops and livestock raised with genetic modification, hormones supplements, and in some cases cruel and inhuman conditions. Engineering companies combined with many technical and support workers laid off. Research and development money was eliminated. Fewer people were hired to do more of the work and because of it the technical knowledge diminished. The middle managers became the slaves of the corporate head offices, taking all of the risks, working long hours and then thrown away for the least

pretense. And more and more people found themselves out of work.

But there are other factors in play. Bankers also issue credit cards which are very convenient and useful. If you don't have the money for something you can charge it. In this way instead of lowering the price of commodities because people didn't have the money, businesses can raise their price instead and the public assumes the risk. It was an easy way to put people into debt. Add to this the fact that the banks charged the merchants an additional 10% of the price of the sale to be able to use the card, a price that the merchants just rolled over to the public whether they used a credit card or not. And banks charge the consumer a high rate just to keep a balance on the account. And now the banks are charging a "per use" fee and a monthly fee.

But there's more, I remembered living in Los Angeles in the middle 1970s trying to buy a house but I didn't have the 10% down payment. So I tried to save the necessary money. House went from \$30,000 average to

\$50,000 in the year 1980, to \$100,000 in 1990, to \$200,000 in 2000, and then they went to \$500,000 in 2007 and now back to \$250,000 in 2009. How do you try to save in that environment? In my case I moved out of Los Angeles to Colorado Springs, Colorado where the odds were more in my favor.

In the 1970s 99% of the American held 85% the wealth of the nation. Now only 40 years later 10% of the population has 70% of the wealth with 40% in the hands of only 1%. The bottom 80% of the American population only has 16% of the wealth with the bottom half having in essence nothing. Across the world 2% of the population owned more than half the world assets. Part of the reason is inflation. Wall Street made so much fake money that it drove our paycheck money to 1/6 its value since 1970. This means that our money is worth less. But the top 10% percentage of the population also own 80% of the stocks, 80% of the bonds, and 80% of the real estate in the US. Their money has some protection against inflation. And as the stock market recovers the

majority of the ones that benefit are the top 10%.

But the painful truth is that in the 1970s we went off of the gold standard. Gold has increased 60 times its 1970 value not 6 times. So everything is ten times more expensive then we think it is; materials cost more, gasoline cost more, food cost more. So life becomes harder and no one knows why. The inflation is being hidden. This last decade gold increased its value 4 times without any inflation at all with the knee happening in 2005, gold has started to increase 6 times faster. So now it is hidden runaway inflation.

And as the money shifted from the majority of people to the elite then the power shifted. There are pots of gold around Washington called Political Action Committees. People can contribute to these funds to help individuals law makers, committee members, and others as they see need. Of course if you have more money you can contribute more out of the goodness of your heart. And you can help the lobbyist help these lawmakers but I'll

talk about them in the next section.

I have to add one additional point about complications. Banks have been with us for a few hundred years. And over this period of time banks evolved into their current level of complexity. Most of us know about Commercial Banks that have savings and transactional accounts (checks, debit and credit cards). We also know about Cooperative Banks (Credit Unions, Mutual Savings Banks) and Savings and Loan Associations. But the richer of us have Investment Banks with asset management, capital raising, sales and trading, Merchant Banks with capital to businesses, Custodian Banks, Export Credit Agencies, Advising Banks, Depository Banks and Off Shore Banks. The rules are different for the rich than for the rest of us. People and businesses with large sums of money don't take the risks that they impose on the general public. We use debit and credit cards anyone can steal. Anyone can transfer money from our bank accounts with no questions asked. But the rich have special banks to hold their

funds, to generate funds, to arrange letters of credit. The rich can afford insurance that the poor cannot.

Next let's talk about the lawyers. They usually require a Bachelor of Science or art degree to enter and an additional three to four years to finish the law degree. After that they need to pass the Bar examination.

American law has got to be the most perverse, twisted affair that has ever entered the minds of man. The original concept was easy enough. The states were older than the federal government so everything stayed with the states except in a few limited cases where commerce, maritime shipping, national defense, treaties, intellectual property were spelled out in detail. And of course the supreme court as an arbitrator. The states in the most part followed English law where the canon law followed the Christian bible and the common law followed the do this and don't do that of our everyday existence. Common law is based on traditions and customs and are not necessary written down. The Stare Decisis

principle is that judges use previously decided cases to decide the punishment. This was a simple system that didn't interfere with the people's democracy. Of course there are a lot of injustice in people's customs like slavery, indentured servants, debtor's prison, and the like but it worked for the rich.

But things didn't stay that simple. Congress with the President can pass new laws that are bounded into the United States Code. And Congress granted broad rule making authority to federal agencies that were never thought of by the signers of the Constitution. These include aviation, railroads, pharmaceuticals, telecommunications, antitrust, trademarks, IRS, and the like. These agencies publish regulations into the Code of Federal Regulations. And the courts like the Supreme Court can make binding precedent that have the force of law. These are kept in the United States Reports. All states have codified their statutory laws into legal code. This is also true at the county and city level to varying degrees. There is no way to know all the rules.

There are Contract Laws governing all contracts; stocks, derivatives, plane tickets. There are Property Laws defining rights and obligations, transfer and titles of personal and real property. There are Trust Laws governing assets held for investments and financial security. There are Tort Laws for compensation if a person rights or property are harmed. There are Criminal Laws where states can prosecute criminals. There are Constitution Laws for the protection of human rights. There are Administrative Laws concerning decisions of government agencies. And there are International Laws governing affairs between sovereign states.

Now lawyers are smart. Why just be lawyers when you could also be judges, congressmen or women, and you could also be the president. And then they limited these positions of power to be only for themselves. Thus the members of the bar not only lived the law, they wrote it, judged it, and are the executive of it. It became the government from the lawyer, for the lawyer, to the lawyer. And then they made

the justice system the “Just Us” system where the rules didn’t apply to them. And then they became Lobbyists.

Lobbyists live in those three name lawyer offices where they can help fund campaigns and peddle influence. They hop in and out of office, working in the executive branch or as a congressional staff person during one administration, and then back as lobbyists, consultant the next. In all cases gaining access to important people, funneling money into PAC accounts, and gaining power and money for themselves. This is one of the highest growth industries in the US with the number of lobbyists doubling every five years.

So what we see here is a closed society running the power of Washington. And the point of this society is to make money. And the way to make money is to have crises, be reelected to fix these crises, and keep the crises going. They can never fix crises since that is how they are making money through the PAC funds. Thus everything stays in a confused muddled mess.

So lastly let's talk about our ruling class. But here we see a separation divided by our two leading political parties. The Republican wants one set of rulers and the Democrats want another set of rulers. The Republicans want the business owners to be the rulers under Washington modest controls. Here the purpose of the government is to provide funding for the big ticket expenditures that business need to develop against. Most large countries promote their businesses in this fashion although the countries usually retain the ownership. An example would be the railroads. The Democrats think the government should rule and protect people's rights. Thus regulatory companies are set up to help the disadvantaged, ensure the common safety, and to protect the citizen's rights. And because of this businessmen will join forces with them for the common good.

The conflicts between the two parties have made a nice nick for the lobbyists. With regulations being deregulated companies are forced into hiring lobbyists to protect their

businesses against increasingly intrusive and uneven government review and concerns. Because of this we no longer have a free market where new companies can grow. We only have companies that have bought protection. And the increased costs will be transferred to the consumers. Add to this the costs of our continuing wars, the bailout of bankers and mortgage houses, runaway inflation and you can see that the American consumer is in a pretty pickle.

But the lawyer / lobbyists also fight for people's rights, against discrimination, protecting entitlements, saving environments, raising the public awareness of the wrongs that are being perpetrated against people, animals, and the land. The evils seem endless, the disregard and the waste is beyond measure. And this too increases cost and also reduces the free market economy.

The leading political parties both have one thing right; it's no longer a democracy. Not with the ruling class ignoring the Constitution. Not with the political elections; I haven't voted

for someone in a long time; I've only voted against the other one. Not with the infinite number of rules that's imposed on us. I think the Republicans want to replace the democracy with a dictatorship run by the businesses leaders, the top 1%. I also think the Democrats want nobility with Lords and Ladies that can grant favors to the selected few. The problem is that both groups missed a simple fact. We don't have any money.

The United States is in debt \$18 trillion dollars (up \$4 trillion since 2011) with an additional \$6 trillion dollars under Fannie Mae, Fannie Mac, and Sallie Mac. That is 1/3 of the world's total debt. Our debt is rising \$4 billion dollars a day. The Social Security and Medicare unfunded liabilities are \$60 trillion dollars. That is real money, the bill that our children will be left with. The country is borrowing money at a high interest rate just to pay the interest on the debt. The lower 80% of Americans only have 14% of the wealth; we do not have the \$200,000 per family to pay this bill. The rich will not pay it, it's against

their principals. In 1965 one out of 50 Americans was on Medicare. Now it's one in six. When Health Care comes we will all be on it, remember it's the health of the nation not the individuals. For some it will be a bitter pill indeed. I've made a bad pun actually; I think the truly sick will just be eliminated.

Now look at this in practical terms. We have given away our wealth, fighting "no win" wars, losing our technical talent, giving our children a hopeless future, developing a total class division by wealth, creating a fuzzy definition of what's right or wrong, breaking apart the family unit, and promoting a godless society. What part of this is not the devil's work?

The love of money, greed, is a destructive force. It has destroyed our core talent in our businesses; it has destroyed our justice system, made a mockery of our political system, removing any hope for our children's future. The few, the self-righteous because they own the money, are declaring the end of the age of the people's governments and a start of a new

age. The age of darkness where the leader of darkness will declare himself to be god, the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet.

So what is the answer? What is the replacement to this house of cards? It's simple. Replace a democracy with a democracy. Get rid of all of the complications, get rid of the lawyers, get rid of the dirty money, and use this simple concept that I learned from another engineer. Start with one piece of paper 11" by 8.5" (I know I've dated myself but use this as a guide on your medium). Draw simple boxes of processes with simple lines of control and communication. No line goes outside of the paper; your whole government on one piece of paper. Each box then becomes its own piece of paper. No control, communication, or especially cash goes outside the page except what's shown on the higher sheets. No lobbyists, back room deals or special interest. Everything has to be transparent. I recommend a direct democracy. If you

develop hundreds of pages you did something wrong. Anything complicated will be taken over by the devil. Simple taxes, or no taxes at all, simple rules, free marketplace rules apply. And after you develop it, follow it. Don't do as our government is currently doing and ignore the constitution and do whatever they see fit.

The hard part is to stare at the blank piece of paper and to say what type of government do we want. Who is the government for? We need to have that discussion in earnest. And the only way that it is going to happen is with a giant reset. The same thing that happened with our current Constitution that was formed in very much the same pattern. Otherwise people will just get with their lobbyists and work around the system. Our courts, congress, and president are not following the constitution now. We are on the slippery slopes of anarchy with a nasty end at the bottom.

These three principal institutions cover most of our civilized world here in the US. And to

look at their complication and mess is the same as looking at our lives and our mess. This is a world without standards, a world without a god. Truthfully this cannot go on, not without killing all of us. Our money has been taken, our freedoms are being taken, our opportunities lost and we are being left with nothing. When the US falls it will take the rest of the world with it. So I need to show the difference about our two possible futures. The one future is this continuing leading, I think, to a new dark age. The other future is a new simpler age based upon a few simple ideas that will lead us to a new renaissance.

Book 5 Chapter 6: Case against the new Technological Dark Age - 666

Beware of the gifts of technology. For as useful as they are, as important as they are, they can ensnare you and over complicate your life. Don't allow yourself to be confused, tools are useful in life but life is not about tools. This is not where you claim your identity; you have to know who you are before you start to create, before your social interactions. Otherwise you will just copy what you see, being part of a fad, losing your identity to the group. You won't be you; you'll be a part of them. You will be living for their purposes, in their world, living their dreams.

Yes, I know that I am a loner, I have been so all of my life. I stand away from the crowds so I can see and can gain perspective. And don't get me wrong, I've lived life; married, had children, had a career as an engineer, made a living. But I could not follow the crowd; I need to know where I was headed. I am a bit of a control freak.

And I am alarmed by the young's dependence upon technology, knowing that this technology could be switched off at any time either as a planned takeover or as an accidental result of war. The social interconnections would be cut leaving people alone, confused, and vulnerable. The cell phones, the cars, the radios and television would be non-functioning. Also the credit cards useless with the banks and businesses unable to function. Electricity may or may not work in the homes and businesses. All commercial computers would be isolated and possible dead. Within a matter of minutes we would move back in time 100 years without the social skills to know how to survive in that time period.

We can thank our politicians for putting us into such a weaken civilization. They really put the public first. They, however, have protected themselves with hardened electronics and isolated internet so they would not be subjected to our losses. But don't worry they will debate and argue our plight until we have succumbed to the cold and hunger.

But there are other losses that I fear could happen just as easily. When I was a young teenager I remember watching a game show either “What’s My Line?” or “I’ve Got a Secret!” I cannot remember. And two young engineers were on it showing an electronic device placed on the skin where people could hear music. In the half century that has passed I never heard about that device again and it has made me cautious. I can see the advances being made where cell phone technology would be combined with thought communication breaking down communication barriers, removing identity thief, improving courtroom witnessing (your memories would be displayed), instant access to libraries of facts and details, not to mention a virtual reality world of entertainment beyond anyone’s imagination. People would become super geniuses that could feel each other’s hurts and could see their truths and lies. But at what costs?

I think language would be the first to go. Our thoughts are faster than our words and if we

could communicate with thoughts then we would quickly forget our languages that we've had since civilization began. And with it our books and poems that help identify us as a people. We couldn't hide anything so we would lose our pretense of civilization. Our hurts would be exposed for the world to see as well as our joys. Loners like me wouldn't exist since all thinking would be combined into the community gab fest; my thoughts would be drowned out as soon as they are expressed. I already had the "Who do you think you are? Einstein?" pulled on me on the Internet.

The second thing to go would be our individuality. You couldn't stand up to the mob of voices that would be against you. You would have to know your place. Soon you wouldn't know if that was your thought or some other person's thought in your head. You would be easier to control. Eager to work and do your all for society, that's all you can think about. At least I think that it would be your thoughts or it could be the thoughts given to

you. At least you will be happy slaves.

The third thing to go will be our wealth. The only money will be the internet money, only the funny money will remain. And the only access to this money will be this device. And because of it they will force everyone to have one, anyone that wants to have any part of society, who wants to eat, who wants to work.

We have already seen the direction of these leaders of society. Removing the truth about a caring God and replacing Him with the idolatry of spirits that they are forcing people to worship. Fulfilling their lusts with the communion of devils and spirits as if those darken beings could ever fill a person and give a person life. Instead they are taking life, leaving people weaken, and in many cases killing people completely. The people are physically still alive but there is nothing left in their souls. A machine, ready to do their leaders bidding without question. Ready to be used and thrown away.

And a strange thing will happen in the near

future according to the bible. A man, a man whom the whole world will like and will follow, is cut down and killed. And before he dies his thoughts will be transferred into a computer and the first artificial person will be created. It becomes the image of the beast, a mind to dominate all minds; the perfect representation of 666 with no center to its physical, mental, or spiritual sections. And now the people will just be puppets and I already gave you God's viewpoint about that. Don't expect to go to heaven if you received the mark of the beast.

Here's the Bible's version, see if you recognize the United States, Russia, China, and United Europe all acting together as the Beast.

And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and

his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.

And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindred, and tongues, and nations.

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men,

And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And

he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

Revelations 13:1-18 KJ

And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

Revelations 14:9-13 KJ

And note that in this strange age we are going to suffer. But take comfort in the following.

There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of my adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubles me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge says.

And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man comes, shall he find faith on the earth?

Mark 18:2-8 KJ

How do we live then? We live for God.

Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward. For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God. For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that

we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes you were healed. For you were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

1 Peter 2:18-25 KJ

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption;

2 Peter 2:9-12 KJ

And here is the warning Jesus gave about these last days.

And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take

heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that you be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in different places. All these are the beginning of sorrows.

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and you shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall grow cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoever reads, let him understand:) Then let those who be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray you that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day: For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And unless those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

Behold, I have told you before. Therefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not. For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For wherever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together. Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

Matthew 24:4-31 KJ

Book 5 Chapter 7: Case for the New Renaissance

Every now and again people need a fresh start. To put aside all of the burdens that they have been carrying and to restart their lives in another direction, living for a different purpose. We need to sound the trumpet of the jubilee as described in the book Leviticus where every 50 years people would stop and take the year off from working, cancel their debts, get back the homes that were taken and trust God for the increase. And the point that God stressed was He didn't want His people oppressing people. People should be free and if people became oppressed then every 50 years there would be a reset and everything would be equalized again.

What would happen if we canceled the national debt? If we canceled all debt around the world? A lot of rich people around the world would become poor. Maybe we would have to cut back on a lot of the fancy resorts, the gambling houses, and night clubs; would that be so bad? A lot of our industry is based

upon the rich; clothes, food, building mansions. Why not go back to simple living? We have real issues that our industry needs to solve and the making rich women dresses and fancy movies isn't it.

The population of the earth in Jesus time was about 200 million people. It took another 500 years to gain another 100 million people. Around the 1600s the world's population was 600 million and it would take 100 years to gain another 100 million people. In the 1800s the population was 900 million and it only required 10 years to add another 100 million people. Now our population is almost 7 billion people and we gain 100 million people every year.

We need to reduce our medical costs, food costs, home costs so we can provide the same rights to everyone. These rights never change; preservation of life, a mate, the protection of our young, a home, food, warmth, water, waste control, air and light; to be loved, to be needed, to grow and develop, to be a part of the world, to help the environment both natural

and social.

So we have to change our thinking. We need to hit the reset button and stop living for the rich and start helping the poor which is actually everyone else. We need to put our problems in perspective. How do you do this? Eliminate all unreal problems, simplify your life! Simplify everybody's life.

So I am back to my blank sheet of paper. This country used to be called US. It was a democracy where people lived their own lives, made their own mistakes, and paid their own way. There were lots of mistakes made for people could take advantage of each other, stealing, killing, and destroying those that they felt were less worthy. On the other hand we've had recent examples of morality governments forcing their will on the population to live right and the end result was stealing, killing, and destroying those that they felt were less worthy.

So how do we live? From the inside out. The real world is where our heart is. You must

have a new heart centered on god. If you have your heart centered on your bank account, on your treasures, you will never be happy because you will never have enough. But if your treasure is in heaven then your heart will be in heaven and you will be guided by heaven instead of by earth. But we've seen what happens to a nation when it throws off a corrupt government and replaces it with a religious government. Their problems are seven times worse. More restrictions on what people can say, what you can wear, what you can own. You see these are outside influences that are trying to make you act right; whatever the "right" standard of the day is. We should not, cannot allow the outside to control the inside because this is a deception and a lie. And where deception and lying is, there's the devil.

In fact people should be allowed to make mistakes. That is how they grow. The young will never be like the old and nor should they be, we've all had our seasons. Allow the young to be young and allow the old to be old.

And stop being so worked up over sex! It shouldn't be made into a god and it shouldn't be made into a taboo. It's just natural. But what is being pushed in this country is not natural, its lust and it will kill the love. Companies must stop selling addictions, whether it is smoking, drinking, gambling, processions, drugs, fears, or sex. People need to be helped not oppressed. And the way to suppress addictions is to take the profit out of it. My thoughts are to control it but don't try to do a prohibition, that never works. It won't eliminate the problem it will just drive it underground. We all have to be honest with ourselves. If we were perfect we wouldn't be here! But we have to walk in love not suppressing each other but lifting each other up in love. Not judging each other but judging ourselves knowing that God died for us in faith spilling His blood for our sake.

Love works no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation

nearer than when we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in lewdness and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put you on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts of it.

Romans 13:10-14

That said I'm back to my piece of paper. For the government to work it needs to be simple. A barter system is simple. Money is simple if it is worth something. A fiat money system is only for the wealthy. Taxes are not simple; you can never really own everything. The state is money hungry, it can never have enough. If you have to tax make it single, simple, flat tax on everything except necessities, food, water, and heat. Going into debt is not simple. Why not make everything pay as you go. If you eliminate debt completely you will reduce the contrast between rich and poor.

And keep the ownership down. The more we

own in common the better. Common transportation is better than everyone owning a car; city parks over private parks, public beaches over private beaches. And I would like to remove the need for money as much as possible. Why not own things in common without having to pay for everything every minute. Why punish people for using public transportation? Why do we force everyone to own insurance that are only safeguarding the rich? Newspapers, radio, television, and now the internet is all on a charge bases. Charges are showing up everywhere quartering and dollaring us to death. In the future I can see the walking on the sidewalk toll, quarter slots in every door, bathroom charges, and air tax. And I can see teams of regulators checking everyone permits and tolls. What nonsense! We must make things as simple as possible so we can tackle the big, important problems.

And where is mercy? If a person has a fire, gets sick or hurt, loses someone, or loses his or her job are we merciful or do we just say “sorry to be you”. Do we own things in union

or just in part. Remember where we came from. Everything in this country started as a community effort. And I know there should be things that we own separately. We need to get away from each other. There is a balance here; it should never be to the extremes.

The bible says that we don't own the land. That is true with most native customs. If we thought that the land was owned by God, we could use it if we treated it right. If a person didn't treat it right then that person would be kicked off the land. It would solve a lot of environmental issues. And this concept of "I can do whatever I want since I am making money" has to go. We don't need those people. We don't need the destroyers.

Yes, I know that we will always have that kind with us, just like we will always have the poor and the rich with us. But we need to remember this age where the destroyers almost destroyed everything. Greed is a destroying force not a creative one. The society must have a balance to it where people can grow and create and have some protections against

the destroyers. Here's the key.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever.

1 John 2:15-17 KJ

So why are we so confused? We fell short of the glories of God. We are not only an earthly creature, we are a godly one. Which is strange considering how ungodly we have been acting. Worse than an animal that wouldn't, couldn't do the things we have done. Now you know why we must be humble for the rest of our existence. We know we are capable of doing terrible things and we must put these things behind us.

We knew just a little bit about splitting the atom and look at the number of times that we almost went to nuclear war. We would have

all died but God was protecting us. How are we going to act when we split the electron and find more energy than Einstein thought possible? Are we going to destroy the earth or are we going to help everyone have a new standard of living? Why is helping people not part of our economy? If it's important to God it should be important to us.

People have been living in a dream world, a sleep to their potentials and gifts. People have been concentrating on imaginary problems and have been ignoring the real problems. And we've done this by ignoring what God wants. We have lived faithless lives where we hoarded physical possessions and ignored the needs of others. Ignoring the words of God and his precious promises. So how do we live? This way!

A new commandment I give unto you, That you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one to another.

John 13:34-35 KJ

So what we need to protect are the essential parts of life; the creative spark, the love, the joys of life. And when God comes then we will get the tree of Life whose leaves are for the healing of the nations.

The tree of Life is as complicated and detailed as the tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. This second tree we know, unfortunately, since conceptual knowledge has replaced real knowledge for most of the population. There is a whole world in knowing outside of our senses that we have closed our mind to. Instead we only have knowledge of the outside physical universe that we can see, feel, hear, taste and smell. And as the tree of knowledge expanded upon the physical universe then the tree of Life must expanded upon the inner universe. And this tree will bring us closer to God.

The renaissance will start after the evil is burned out of the land. But know this we caused it. If we would change our ways and our thoughts the evil listed above would not happen. It could not, its needs mankind since

it has already been defeated. It needs our light, our life to sustain itself. It is already cut off from god. If we turned our back to it, if we just say “God rebukes you”, if we would drop our foolishness, it would die. We have to start living for God. We have to be baptized, dropping off everything that connects us to our old life.

In the old days people were baptized naked. They threw away their clothes, their names, their reputations. They lived like the new creatures that they were. They lived new for God. And God was the head of their government, of their society, of their families. Nothing stood above God; nothing replaced God in their lives.

Buried with him in baptism, in which also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, has he given life together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was

contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it. Let no man therefore judge you in food, or in drink, or in respect of a holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

Let no man beguile you of your reward in a false humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increases with the increase of God. Therefore if you be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are you subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

Colossians 2:12-22 KJ

And here are cases of worshiping of angels. If people are talking to you and there is background music; immediately assume that you are being lied to. They are playing with your emotions. Watch out for hex symbols it means they are under a spirit's protection or spell. All banks and most businesses have them and congress outlawed the use of letters in a trademark forcing symbols. Watch how word's meanings get twisted so you will assume one thing when they actually said the opposite. A thing like "value engineering" is actually making things fail after a certain period so you have to buy a new one. Note that the entire purpose of entertainment is to keep you distracted. I've always thought that the more cooking segments on the morning TV news shows, the more they don't want you to think about the news. You may get wise to your captivity. Beware of false titles. Our leaders are called "Honorable" probably because they're not.

The outside needs to be simple; it's the smallest part of us. We need to concentrate on

the inside which is larger. But in this society the insides have been sacrifice for the outside living so we need to rediscover the insides. But how do we change our hearts? It's infinitely big and cannot be moved no matter how hard we try. Only God can move the heart. We must center our living on Him. So being new beings we are going to behave differently. What will be important is how we will live.

Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, insides of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: just as Christ forgave you, so also do you. And above all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfectness. And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also you are called in one body; and be you thankful.

Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual

songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord. And whatsoever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

Colossians 3:12-17 KJ

How do we form a new government? The way engineers have done things for centuries. We use the KISS method; Keep It Simple - Stupid! We need a government that is clear, open, and for the people. A lot of the original constitution is good; it was just how people handled it that was bad. However we can make it a government for the people. Instead of being based upon money, and laws, and people in authority it needs to base upon love, faith, and hope. And the way to do that is to go back to small community living. We need city and community rights and state rights over the top government rights. Having a sense of identity in a community is important. This is where all of our major growth has comes from. Our culture came from our communities; the songs, poems, plays, stories that resonate with our identity. But that seldom works from the

top down. The top companies will always play it safe; rehash of old movies, old products with fancier containers, books from known writers, TV for the young adult by the young adult without meaning or substance or worse “reality shows”.

What made the United States great was from the bottom, from the people and I suspect that this is true with the other countries as well. We need to be unique, that is the beauty of life. If an artist takes all of the colors and blends them all together all you get is a mud color. That is the actual problem that we have in our world today, mixing in everything until we have nothing. I expect nothing less from any government committee, company governing board, church elders board, or government agency. Almost everything we have is mud although Paul had a better name for it.

*Yes doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but **dung**, that I may win Christ, And be found in him,*

not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith: That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

Philippians 3:8-14 KJ

Well, here's my one sheet of paper. It is based upon the model of a human being; there is the mind, the body, and the heart. This exists at the county level where the states and the federal government exist to support the

counties. And each county is different but they exist to support the people of the counties, not to enslave or dominate them. And I think that the currency should be energy not money. The cells of our body get food and oxygen from the blood and they give their waste to the blood. They don't have to pay for this service. Imagine all of the fat cells getting all of the food and the muscle and brain cells in starvation. Oops; I just defined congress.

Infrastructure – The Body

Power / Water / Air / Waste
Management

Transportation Services and
Management

Protection – Fire, Police, Health

Community Planning – Homes, Jobs,
Parks

Communication Services – Phones,
Internet, Broadcasts, Landlines

Depot Replacement and Repair

Planning – The Mind

Growth Planning
Urban Renewal
Environmental Protection
Technological Improvements

Cultural – The Heart

Educational at all levels
Communication Platforms
Museums
Performance Halls
Think Tanks
Cultural Fairs

Book 5 Chapter 8: Changing Our View

I had a dream where there were tall mountains that went all the way down to the oceans at a very steep angle. And at the base sitting in the water was this huge building with many wheels each having smaller wheels within like gears or turbines all thrashing about the water gathering energy from the water. Up higher about 2/3 of the way up the mountain directly above this huge building sat a round dome. It was on top of a peak that stood in front of the rest of the mountains. It was also huge, lit from within with a silver light with sparking hints of all possible colors. Also above this dome, on the very peak of the mountains, stood a home. It was also huge such that all three structures were the same size. This house had windows that were open and it looked warm and comfortable.

This is a model of a person. The building at the base is our animal drive, our energy to make a home and to secure a job. The dome is our heart, our cathedral where our love, art, the infinity within that goes all of the way back to

god. The house is our head where we live, hear, see, talk, think and reason about the universe.

Of course there is more to a person's body than this but when you realize the complexity and power of this image is dwarf by the actual complexity of the human body then the awe starts to hit. Think about the digestive system and the complexity involved in generating energy and the materials required for repairs and growth. Think about the battles fought in your systems for health and strength. Think about how much is invested in you so you can have these three centers of viewpoints. Each of these centers is important because they sit on a barren, dark mountain range. The light on the mountains comes from these centers. Imagine the earth was empty, void, and darkness was on the face of the deep; then God intervened. You are the end result of this intervention. So find your purpose in life and live your dreams. Create and have faith. Love and be loved. Be at peace. Work out your relationship with God. You have the animal

part, the intellectual part and your innermost heart part. When these three become one, nothing will be impossible to you.

People were wonderfully made but where is their hearts? There are a lot of self-righteous people in the major religions around the earth who will never have their part of heaven. God will spit them out. And all of their flowery words and their lofty buildings won't save them.

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was hungry, and you gave me food: I was thirsty, and you

gave me drink: I was a stranger, and you took me in: Naked, and you clothed me: I was sick, and you visited me: I was in prison, and you came unto me.

Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when did we see you hungry, and fed you? or thirsty, and gave you drink? When did we see you a stranger, and took you in? or naked, and clothed you? Or when did we see you sick, or in prison, and came unto you?

And the King shall answer and say unto them, Truthfully I say unto you, Inasmuch as you have done it unto one of the least of these my brothers, you have done it unto me.

Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was hungry, and you gave me no food: I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and you took me not in: naked, and you clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and you visited me not.

Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we you hungry, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto you?

Then shall he answer them, saying, Truthfully I say unto you, Inasmuch as you did it not to one of the least of these, you did it not to me.

And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.
Matthew 25:31-46 KJ Clarified

There is no way out. If you are rich and place a heavy burden on the poor it is doubtful you are going to make it in the gate. If you are in a war and you told your followers to kill innocent people it is doubtful you are going to make it in the gate. If you are in authority and you suppress the weak it is doubtful you are going to make it in the gate. If you are clever and you invent new schemes to take people's money it is doubtful you are going to make it in the gate. If you use women for their beauty being a whoremonger it is doubtful you are going to make it in the gate. If you ignore

sexually crimes against children it is doubtful you are going to make it in the gate. If you hate, if you lie, if you commune with the dark spirits, you have no part in God and He has no part in you. You might as well get a good seat to the ending of the world because that will be the last time you will have any peace and comfort, ever. For the rest of eternity you will be in torment; screaming in pain without relief.

And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

Revelations 21:6-8 KJ

There is an end of the age coming. The sun

being darkened, the moon not giving any light, the stars falling from heaven, and the powers of the heavens being shaken can only mean one thing, the earth is hit by a meteorite or comet and it is shifted; the north pole and the south pole will be over different continents. It is the center of the earth that is rotating, the outer land masses and oceans are being dragged along for the ride as well as the atmosphere. If the earth is hit at the right angle then the outer plate will move in another direction until it stabilizes again with the inner core. However the ocean tsunamis, the super hurricane winds, and the violent land movement will destroy a lot of the life on the planet. The resulting dust in the atmosphere will lower the temperature for years if not decades. It won't destroy everything since it has happened before, over a dozen times as measured by the different magnetic fields detected in the seabed. This is described in detail in Revelation chapters 8, 9, 10, and 11. Let me start with chapter 7 that you could have a part of if you gave away everything and started to live for Him.

After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb. And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest.

And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore are they before the throne of

God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

Revelation 7:7-17 KJ

And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets.

And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. And the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel's hand.

And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood; And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters; And

the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!

Revelation 8:1-13 KJ

And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were

darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions. And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound

of chariots of many horses running to battle. And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five months.

And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

One woe is past; and, behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men.

And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them. And thus I saw the

horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone. By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths. For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

Revelation 9:1-21 KJ

And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was

as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire: And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth, And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven, And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath

declared to his servants the prophets.

And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the earth.

And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book.

And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

Revelation 10:1-11 KJ

And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure

the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein. But the court which is without the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months.

And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth. These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will. And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them. And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of

the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. And they of the people and kindreds and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another; because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

And after three days and an half the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them. And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them.

And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

The second woe is past; and, behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, Saying, We give thee thanks, O LORD God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

And the temple of God was opened in heaven,

and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

Revelation 11:1-19 KJ

Book 5 Chapter 9: Promises of Jesus

The following are selections from the book of Matthew given here to increase your faith. It contains the words Jesus spoke and not the miracles He performed. It is important to get His words into you. I recommend spending some time in the gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John when you have opportunity.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Matthew 22:36-40 KJ Clarified

And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceedingly glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. You are the salt of the earth: but if the salt has lost its savour, with what shall it be salted? it is thereafter good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. You are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a

candlestick; and it gives light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. For truthfully I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one small mark shall in no way pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That unless your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

You have heard that it was said of them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger

of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca (worthless), shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has anything against you; Leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be cast into prison. Truthfully I say unto you, You shall by no means come out from there, till you have paid the last copper coin.

You have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looks on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if your right eye offend you, pluck it out, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your

members should perish, and not that your whole body should be cast into hell. And if your right hand offend you, cut it off, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not that your whole body should be cast into hell.

It has been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, except for the cause of fornication, causes her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced commits adultery.

Again, you have heard that it has been said by them of old time, You shall not swear falsely, but shall perform unto the Lord your oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shall you swear by your head, because you cannot make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yes, yes; No, no: for whatsoever is more than these comes of

evil.

You have heard that it has been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That you resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue you at the law, and take away your coat, let him have your cloak also. And whosoever shall compel you to go a mile, go with him two. Give to him that asks you, and from him that would borrow of you turn you not away.

You have heard that it has been said, You shall love your neighbor, and hate your enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for those who despitefully use you, and persecute you; That you may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he makes his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? do not even the publicans the same? And if you salute your

brothers only, what do you more than others? do not even the publicans so? Be you therefore perfect, just as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Take heed that you do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise you have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when you are doing your alms, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Truthfully I say unto you, They have their reward. But when you are doing alms, let not your left hand know what your right hand does: That your alms may be in secret: and your Father which sees in secret himself shall reward you openly. And when you pray, you shall not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Truthfully I say unto you, They have their reward. But you, when you pray, enter into your closet, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father which is in

secret; and your Father which sees in secret shall reward you openly.

But when you pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not you therefore like unto them: for your Father knows what things you have need of, before you ask him. After this manner therefore pray you: Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name. Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if you forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. Moreover when you fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Truthfully I say unto you,

They have their reward. But you, when you fast, anoint your head, and wash your face; That you appear not unto men to fast, but unto your Father which is in secret: and your Father, which sees in secret, shall reward you openly.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust corrupts, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

The light of the body is the eye: if therefore your eye be sound, your whole body shall be full of light. But if your eye be evil, your whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you be darkness, how great is that darkness! No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon.

Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. Is not the life more than food, and the body than clothing? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? And why take you thought for clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Therefore, if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today exists, and tomorrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?

Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, How shall we be clothed? (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. But seek you first the kingdom of God, and his

righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the next day: for the next day shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

Judge not, that you be not judged. For with what judgment you judge, you shall be judged: and with what measure you mete out, it shall be measured back to you again. And why do you behold the speck that is in your brother's eye, but consider not the beam that is in your own eye? Or how will you say to your brother, Let me pull out the speck out of your eye; and, behold, a beam is in your own eye? You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the speck out of your brother's eye.

Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and tear you.

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto

you: For every one that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. Enter you in at the narrow gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and many there be which go in there: Because narrow is the gate, and constricted is the way, which leads unto life, and few there be that find it.

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. You shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree brings forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree

brings forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that does not bring forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Therefore by their fruits you shall know them.

Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name? and in your name have cast out devils? and in your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity.

Therefore whosoever hears these sayings of mine, and does them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that hears these sayings of mine, and does them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the

sand. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall thereof. And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine. For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

Matthew 5:1-48, 6:1-34, 7:1-29 KJ

And he spoke many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the wayside, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some a hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who has ears to hear, let him hear.

And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speak you unto them in parables?

He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. For whosoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever has not, from him shall be taken away even that which he has. Therefore I speak to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which says, By hearing you shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing you shall see, and shall not perceive: For this people's heart is grown gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For truthfully I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous

men have desired to see those things which you see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which you hear, and have not heard them.

Hear you therefore the parable of the sower. When any one hears the word of the kingdom, and understands it not, then comes the wicked one, and catches away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the wayside. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that hears the word, and quickly with joy receives it; yet has he not root in himself, but lasts for a while: for when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, by and by he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that hears the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. But he that received seed into the good ground is he that hears the word, and understands it; which also bears fruit, and brings forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

Another parable put he forth unto them,

saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field? from whence then has it tares? He said unto them, An enemy has done this. The servants said unto him, Do you want then that we go and gather them up? But he said, No; lest while you gather up the tares, you root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather you together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the

greatest among herbs, and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches of it.

Another parable spoke he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

All these things spoke Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spoke he not unto them: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

He answered and said unto them, He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of

the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and those who do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; which when a man has found, he hides, and for joy of it goes and sells all that he has, and buys that field.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking good pearls: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered

of every kind: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus says unto them, Have you understood all these things?

They say unto him, Yes, Lord.

Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which brings forth out of his treasure things new and old.

Matthew 13:3-52 KJ Clarified

Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Why do your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat

bread.

But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and mother: and, He that curses father or mother, let him die the death. But you say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift to God, whatever you might have gained from me; And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have you made the commandment of God of no effect by your tradition.

You hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, This people draws close unto me with their mouth, and honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand: Not that which goes into the mouth defiles a man; but that which comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man.

Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Do you know that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying?

But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father has not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they are blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

And Jesus said, Are you also yet without understanding? Do not you yet understand, that whatsoever enters in at the mouth goes into the belly, and is cast out into the drain? But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands defiles not a man.

Matthew 15:1-20 KJ Clarified

How is it that you do not understand that I spoke it not to you concerning bread, but that you should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?

Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

When Jesus came into the borders of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?

And they said, Some say that you are John the Baptist: some, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.

He says unto them, But whom say you that I am?

And Simon Peter answered and said, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.

And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed are you, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood has not revealed it unto you, but my

Father which is in heaven.

And I say also unto you, That you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

And I will give unto you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Matthew 16:11-19 KJ Clarified

Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for truthfully I say unto you, If you have faith as a grain of mustard seed, you shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. But this kind goes not out except by prayer and fasting.

Matthew 17:19-21 KJ Clarified

At the same time came the disciples unto

Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Truthfully I say unto you, Unless you be converted, and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoever shall receive one such little child in my name receives me.

But whoever shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Woe unto the world because of offenses! for it must be that offenses come; but woe to that man by whom the offense comes!

Therefore if your hand or your foot offend you, cut them off, and cast them from you: it is better for you to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be

cast into everlasting fire. And if your eye offend you, pluck it out, and cast it from you: it is better for you to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

Take heed that you despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

Matthew 18:1-11 KJ Clarified

Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?

Jesus says unto him, I say not unto you, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him

to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay you all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him a hundred denarii: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me what you owe. And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and asked him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay you all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

Then his lord, after he had called him, said unto him, O you wicked servant, I forgave you all that debt, because you desired me to: Should not you also have had compassion on

your fellow servant,

just as I had pity on you?

And his lord was very angry, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if you from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

Matthew 18:1-35 KJ Clarified

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the laborers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, And said unto them; Go you also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing

idle, and says unto them, Why stand you here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man has hired us. He says unto them, Go you also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall you receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard says unto his steward, Call the laborers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a denarius. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a denarius.

And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house, Saying, These last have worked but one hour, and you have made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do you no wrong: did not you agree with me for a denarius? Take that which is yours, and go your way: I will give unto this last, just as unto you. Is it not lawful for me to

do what I will with my own? Is your eye evil, because I am good?

So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many are called, but few chosen.

Matthew 20:1-16 KJ Clarified

And when he saw a fig tree on the way, he came to it, and found nothing on it, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on you henceforward forever. And immediately the fig tree withered away.

And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How quickly is the fig tree withered away!

Jesus answered and said unto them, Truthfully I say unto you, If you have faith, and doubt not, you shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if you shall say unto this mountain, Be you removed, and be you cast into the sea; it shall be done. And all things, whatsoever you shall ask in prayer, believing, you shall receive.

Matthew 21:19-22 KJ Clarified

But what think you? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work today in my vineyard.

He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not.

Whether of them two did the will of his father?

They say unto him, The first.

Jesus says unto them, Truthfully I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you on the way of righteousness, and you believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and you, when you had seen it, repented not afterward, that you might believe him.

Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress

in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country:

And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it. And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will respect my son.

But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.

And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

When the lord therefore of the vineyard comes, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

They say unto him, He will miserably destroy

those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

Jesus says unto them, Did you never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes?

Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits of it. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spoke of them. But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

Matthew 21:17-46 KJ Clarified

And Jesus answered and spoke unto them again by parables, and said, The kingdom of

heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell those who are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: And the remnant took his servants, and treated them spitefully, and slew them.

But when the king heard of it, he was very angry: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

Then says he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were invited were not worthy. Go you therefore into the highways, and as many as you shall find, invite to the marriage.

So those servants went out into the highways,

and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

And he says unto him, Friend, how came you in to here not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

For many are called, but few are chosen.
Matthew 22:1-14 KJ Clarified

The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were with us seven

brothers: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother: Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh. And last of all the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

Jesus answered and said unto them, You do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.

But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were

gathered together.

Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying, Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

Jesus said unto him, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Matthew 22:23-40 KJ Clarified

But be not you called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all you are brothers. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be you called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

Matthew 23:8-12 KJ Clarified

Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When its branch is yet tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is close: So likewise you, when you shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.

Truthfully I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only. But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, And did not know until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be

grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Watch therefore: for you know not what hour your Lord does come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have permitted his house to be broken up. Therefore be you also ready: for in such an hour as you think not the Son of man comes.

Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has made ruler over his household, to give them food in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. Truthfully I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; And shall begin to smite his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looks not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him

his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go you rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Truthfully I say

unto you, I know you not.

Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of man comes.

For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his own ability; and immediately took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and dug in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants comes, and reckons with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, you delivered unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, you good and faithful servant: you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over

many things: enter you into the joy of your lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, you delivered unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things: enter you into the joy of your lord.

Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew you that you are a hard man, reaping where you have not sown, and gathering where you have not scattered: And I was afraid, and went and hid your talent in the earth: lo, there you have that which is yours.

His lord answered and said unto him, You wicked and slothful servant, you knew that I reap where I did not sow, and gather where I have not scattered: You ought therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received my own with interest.

Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which has ten talents. For unto every one that has shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that has not shall be taken away even that which he has. And cast you the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was hungry, and you gave me food: I was thirsty, and you gave me drink: I was a stranger, and you took me in: Naked, and you clothed me: I was sick, and you visited me: I was in prison, and you

came unto me.

Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when did we see you hungry, and fed you? or thirsty, and gave you drink? When did we see you a stranger, and took you in? or naked, and clothed you? Or when did we see you sick, or in prison, and came unto you?

And the King shall answer and say unto them, Truthfully I say unto you, Inasmuch as you have done it unto one of the least of these my brothers, you have done it unto me.

Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was hungry, and you gave me no food: I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and you took me not in: naked, and you clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and you visited me not.

Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we you hungry, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and

did not minister unto you?

Then shall he answer them, saying, Truthfully I say unto you, Inasmuch as you did it not to one of the least of these, you did it not to me.

And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.
Matthew 24:32-51, 25:1-46 KJ Clarified

Book 5 Chapter 10: The Lord's Sacrifice per Matthew

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, You know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified. Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, And consulted that they might take Jesus by trickery, and kill him. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at food.

But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste? For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble you the woman? for she has wrought a good work upon me. For you have the poor always with you; but me you have not always. For in that she has poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial. Truthfully I say unto you, Wherever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman has done, be told for a memorial of her.

Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, And said unto them, What will you give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they contracted with him for thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where will you that we prepare for you to eat the passover?

And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master says, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at your house

with my disciples.

And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover. Now when the evening was come, he sat down with the twelve.

And as they did eat, he said, Truthfully I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

And they were exceedingly sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

And he answered and said, He that dips his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

The Son of man goes as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.

Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I?

He said unto him, You have said it.

And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; For this is my blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

Then says Jesus unto them, All you shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of you, yet will I never be offended.

Jesus said unto him, Truthfully I say unto you, That this night, before the cock crow, you shall deny me three times.

Peter said unto him, Though I should die with you, yet will I not deny you. Likewise also said all the disciples.

Then comes Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and says unto the disciples, Sit you here, while I go and pray yonder. And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

Then says he unto them, My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even unto death: tarry you here, and watch with me. And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as you will.

And he comes unto the disciples, and finds them asleep, and says unto Peter, What, could you not watch with me one hour? Watch and

pray, that you enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, unless I drink it, your will be done. And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

Then comes he to his disciples, and says unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that does betray me. And while he yet spoke, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast. And immediately he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, master; and kissed him.

And Jesus said unto him, Friend, why are you come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus and took him.

And, behold, one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest's, and smote off his ear.

Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again your sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. Think you that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are you come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and you laid no hold on me. But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

And they that had laid hold on Jesus led him

away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end.

Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death; But found none: yes, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

And said, This fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answer you nothing? what is it which these witness against you?

But Jesus held his peace,

And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure you by the living God, that you tell us whether you be the Christ, the Son of God.

Jesus says unto him, You have said it: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall you see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

Then the high priest tore his clothes, saying, He has spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now you have heard his blasphemy. What think you?

They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with the palms of their hands, Saying, Prophecy unto us, you Christ, Who is he that smote you?

Now Peter sat outside in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, You also were with Jesus of Galilee. But he denied before them all, saying, I do not know what you say. And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth. And again he denied with

an oath, I do not know the man. And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely you also are one of them; for your speech betrays you. Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I do not know the man. And immediately the cock crowed. And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crows, you shall deny me three times. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death: And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed innocent blood.

And they said, What is that to us? see you to that.

And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood. And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Therefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Are you the King of the Jews?

And Jesus said unto him, You say it.

And when he was accused by the chief priests

and elders, he answered nothing.

Then said Pilate unto him, Do you hear not how many things they witness against you?

And he answered him never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

Now at that feast the governor was accustomed to release unto the people a prisoner, whomever they desired. And they had then a notorious prisoner, called Barabbas.

Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom do you will that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

For he knew that because of envy they had delivered him.

When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Do nothing to that righteous man: for I have endured many things this day in a dream because of him.

But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

The governor answered and said unto them, Which of the two do you will that I release unto you?

They said, Barabbas.

Pilate says unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ?

They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

And the governor said, Why, what evil has he done?

But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see you to it.

Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. Then he released Barabbas unto them: and after Jesus was whipped, he delivered him to be crucified.

Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers.

And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head. And after they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own clothing on him, and led him away to crucify him.

And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross. And when they had come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted of it, he would not drink.

And they crucified him, and divided his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They divided my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

And sitting down they watched him there; And set up over his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

And they that passed by reviled him, shook their heads, And saying, You that destroys the temple, and builds it in three days, save yourself. If you be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the

King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. The thieves also, which were crucified with him, reproached him the same way.

Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?

Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calls for Elijah. And immediately one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. The rest said, Let it be, let us see whether Elijah will come to save him.

Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

And, behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks tore; And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

And many women were there beholding far off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him: Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

When the evening was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: He went to Pilate, and requested the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped

it in a clean linen cloth, And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulcher, and departed. And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulcher.

Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

Command therefore that the sepulcher be made secure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, You have a watch: go your way, make it as secure as you can. So they went, and made the sepulcher secure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary

Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulcher. And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his clothing white as snow: And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not you: for I know that you seek Jesus, which was crucified. He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goes before you into Galilee; there shall you see him: lo, I have told you.

And they departed quickly from the sepulcher with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word. And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brothers that

they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and showed unto the chief priests all the things that were done. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, Saying, Say you, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. So they took the money, and did as they were instructed: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching

them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

Amen.

Matthew 26:1-75, 27:1-66, 28:1-20 KJ
Clarified

Book 5 Chapter 11: The End of an Age and the Start of the Future Age

God is coming. Not on a donkey which was a sign of a superior advancing army coming to negotiate, but on a white horse signaling that the war has started. He'll take whatever He wants and He will destroy whatever He finds against Him. If you stand against Him you will lose.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn. In that day shall there be a great mourning in Jerusalem, as the mourning of Hadadrimmon in the valley of Megiddon. And the land shall mourn, every family apart; the family of the house of David apart, and their wives apart; the family of the

house of Nathan apart, and their wives apart; The family of the house of Levi apart, and their wives apart; the family of Shimei apart, and their wives apart; All the families that remain, every family apart, and their wives apart.

In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land. And it shall come to pass, that when any shall yet prophesy, then his father and his mother that begat him shall say unto him, Thou shalt not live; for thou speakest lies in the name of the LORD: and his father and his mother that begat him shall thrust him through when he prophesieth. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the prophets shall be ashamed every one of his vision, when he hath prophesied; neither shall they wear a rough

garment to deceive: But he shall say, I am no prophet, I am an husbandman; for man taught me to keep cattle from my youth.

And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends.

Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones. And it shall come to pass, that in all the land, saith the LORD, two parts therein shall be cut off and die; but the third shall be left therein. And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The LORD is my God.

Behold, the day of the LORD cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee. For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to

battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city. Then shall the LORD go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle.

And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south. And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the LORD my God shall come, and all the saints with thee.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark: But it shall be one day which shall be known to the LORD, not day, nor night: but it shall come to

pass, that at evening time it shall be light. And it shall be in that day, that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem; half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be. And the LORD shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one.

Zechariah 12:9-14, 13:1-9, 14:1-9 KJ

Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the

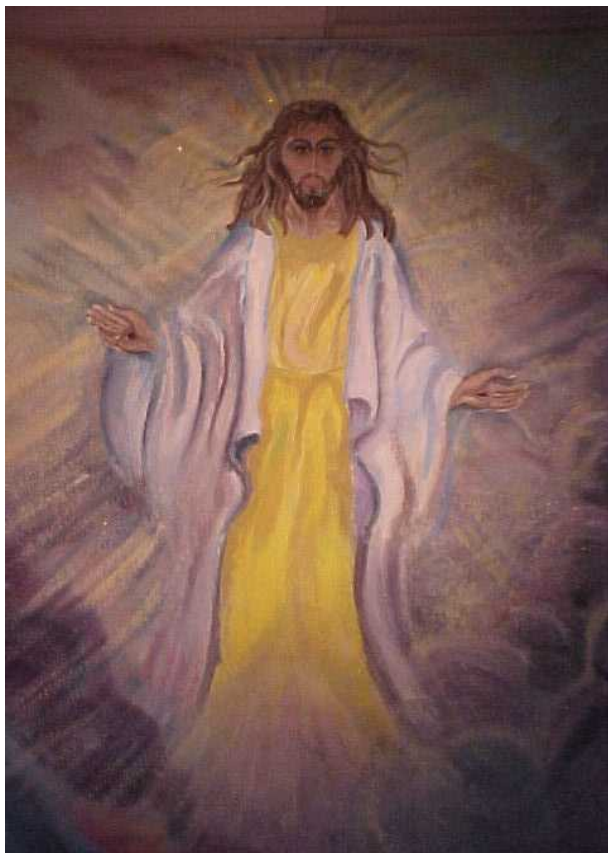
earth for thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.

Psalms 2:1-12 KJ

It's not my will that you'll be lost. I've spent my time protecting you, watching you develop; slowly changing and becoming enlightened. And then this brutal age appears, destroying, wanting, and killing. Like it was no big thing! The people said it is just business, it how things are done in this world. God doesn't mind, he doesn't do anything against it. Everybody is for themselves.

But you see they are wrong. God does care. They have no idea how much God cares; the absolute anguished crying in my soul, the pain. If they had any idea the horror they have inflicted on me I am sure they would not have

done it. Am I someone they can ignore? Someone who's opinion doesn't matter? Someone they can work around? I am Olam Ha-Ba (the world to come), Life within! I am the Almighty One, the one to be feared! When I speak the land trembles and mountains are split in two. Rivers change their channels, the sky darkens and the dead rise. No one stands before me! Here's your plight. One third of you will be gone in one day and more will follow. Your cities will be gone, your society crumbles, and life as you know it will come to an end. You can hide but no hole will be deep enough that I can't find you. Your toys will bring you no comfort. You will feed off of each other's bones. You wanted a world without my influence or protection? You got what you requested. Those that are mine I will take. The rest of you are left for an age too horrible to describe.



I looked outside and the world hasn't ended

yet and if you haven't taken the mark of the beast there is still hope. The Lord came to save, not to judge; he will give you another chance. But he did set a fixed time for you to accept his salvation; his waiting will not go on forever. How long do you have? Even the angels do not know! If you wait too long, if you don't keep your anointing oil filled which is the Holy Spirit, if you don't know God or be known by Him, you will be left behind. In fact I hope that this is like Jonah and the whale. I would like to see the whole nation changed, the whole world changed so like the city of Nineveh the curses that the Lord planned were averted as the people repented. But that is your choice.

Throughout the pages of this book I've given all of the various ways that you can accept the Lord and be saved. I will give you one more here; the two malefactors (felons) that were crucified with him. It really is the story of our choice as we live our lives and as we face death.

And a superscription also was written over

him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If you be Christ, save yourself and us. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Do not you fear God, seeing you are in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man has done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when you come into your kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Truthfully I say unto you, Today shall you be with me in paradise.

Luke 23:38-43 KJ

All of these ways of accepting God's grace require the heart and the head. From the heart you have to believe, you have to have faith. From your head you have to make a stand in either words or deeds. You have to confess God's gifts and humble yourself to God. There is no other way. So now as the storm gathers decide to live for God. Humble yourselves and never ever accept the mark of

the beast. It is far better to die.

Since you made it all the way to the end of the book let me leave you with a parable.

The man was dragged into court accused of many crimes. The courtroom was huge and the judge's seat so high that the man couldn't even see the judge.

"How do you plead?" the judge's voice thundered.

The man sunk to his knees. "Not Guilty?" the man cried forlorn.

"Then let the trial begin!" the judge roared. "For the prosecutor we have mankind's chief accuser, the devil. And for your defense we have my son, the Lord."

The man is taken to the witness box. The devil comes to him; his red eyes gleaming.

The devil smiles at him and says "Tell us how you made your money"

“I’m an engineer,” the man said. “I build circuits for machines.”

“And what kind of machines?” the devil asked.

“I don’t know; I didn’t care” the man didn’t see the signals from the Lord to stop. “I followed the specifications and delivered the product. They paid me good money for it!”

“Well, since we’re here, let’s look at some of these machines you made circuits for” the devil responded. “You were part of some wonderful enterprises.” “Here at the start of your career you made a ten second delay. It was used to delay landmines from going off when they were first stepped on. This way a company of men would be over the mine instead of just one solitary person. Would you like to meet your victims?”

A bunch of limbless, mangled, bloodied bodies booed from the audience. The man looked on in horror.

“And later you made secure communication

equipment. The drug runners loved you for that!” the devil declared. “And that code generator circuit was a mark of genius. All of the dictators around the world could break into people’s cell phones and stop the demonstrations before they could start.”

Then the devil looked him straight in the eye. “When you were designing something for a noble purpose, you cheated the government. You used untested parts that didn’t meet the specifications.”

“I had to!” The man cried out. “The boss said that it would cost me my job!”

“Nonsense” the devil disputed. “He was just a low level program manager. The president of the company would have protected you. You never gave him a chance. Would you like to see what that devilment caused?”

“No, no, I’m sorry. I am a terrible person!” the man said through tears again ignoring the cries from his defense.

Then the judge roared “Do you want to change your plead?”

The Lord stands up “Yes he would your honor” then he goes over and whispers something into the man’s ear.

The devil goes back to his bench laughing to himself.

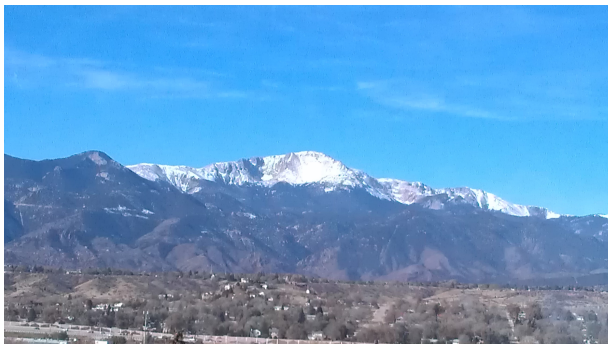
The man stands up. “I plead the blood!”

“Case dismissed!” the judge declared. “All charges dropped.”

The devil wasn’t smiling then.

Just make sure you make that plead before you die.

Summary



May 30, 2015

There are moments that can change a person's life. I would like to share one of mine. I was given a gift this last Christmas (2014); a new thought that I need to explore. And this writing is part of my unwrapping process. And I want to be careful here because it is an easy gift to lose if it's not carefully documented. Somehow our minds are such that we can substitute a thought for a vision, a concept for a reality, and never really see a thing for what it really is. We can only see it for what we think it is and lose the truth of it all together.

To show you my vision I have to show you the insights that led to it. My understanding of the universe is different than any other concepts that I've come across. I've came up with a very simple model of Physics that uses singularity space as the driving force of everything in the universe. And the space of the universe is where these singularities spaces touch each other. This is only of interest to those that like physical science. For everyone else it is only

important to know that everything we see around us came from things that we don't see, the singularities.

Now I need to take the thought deeper. What am I? My thoughts are like everyone else, I'm a person living in the universe trying to make my way through this universe. It's all up to me, the universe doesn't care if I exist or not. But I now know that this viewpoint is erroneous.

I have looked at life "Little Book Open - Securing a Narrow Clear Passage to the Future" (the pdf version is free at <https://sites.google.com/site/littlebookopenbookstore/home/book-de>) and realized that a singularity not only contains space it contains energy and awareness. This is the driving force of life in all living beings. Life is aware of it's surroundings and reacts to it. But I also see that there is a third aspect of singularity that I need to explore, the concept of spirit. This is the gift that I want to share.

I exist. My inside is God's outside. My outside

is God's inside. I have only one view of the universe which is what's exterior to me because there is only one God. God has only one inside but he has multiple outsides (universes) since he made them all. Each one of his universes is one of us.

Using this new view, different than the generally held concept of the universe existing, I can say that God exists, that I interact with God and through God interact with other people. This different view is the third creation. And yes the universe exists; we are in the universe, the first creation. And yes we have life, we react to the things being done to us through the universe. This is the second creation. But we really need to spend time with God in the third creation if we want to be more than just animals, more than objects that occupy space.

Matter and light exists with each other and reacts with each other and across all matter and light space develops. Life could have just copied matter and light. The awareness of a

rock being a rock reacting like a rock. Instead life took off in a different direction. It focused the light it received to make an image. It processed the image to cultivate an understanding. An understanding of the universe it was in.

Most people have this same understanding of the universe. They haven't gone that next step beyond understanding into faith. Now generally people confuse faith with hope. Doing something with the hope that the outcome will be successful. There is no reality in that, just dumb luck. Real faith is something more.

The Christian Bible's defines faith as reality:
"Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen."
Hebrews 11:1

The substance of things is the physical universe, it is the product of the space singularities. The evidence of things is the awareness of life. Noticed that this awareness

is not tied to the physical universe, it's tied to the faith.

Faith can force the other two realities to its own will. It is the substance, it is the evidence. So what is this faith? It's not a mind set since the mind is from life the second creation. No, truth is faith comes from God. So how do we gain faith from God? We have to be at peace to be a part of God's rest. We have to join him in the seventh day. Not to do our will but to do His will. If we become servants of God first then we can have our hope fulfilled. If we tend to God then He will tend to us. Our interactions has to be with God.

So how do we deal with a Godless universe? Well by definition, a Godless universe is empty and void. Everything that we see is from God even if it is not doing the will of God. So if we walk in faith we have the upper hand. We can change things with God so our hope is fulfilled. They can't. They can only use life's ability to gather the things that they can see. We can gather the things that we don't see

but only God knows about. Their evidence of their success is based upon what they own. Our evidence is based upon God and truthfully the less we own the better off we are. We need to walk in faith, interacting with God.

Life sees matter and energy interactions but we see something else, we see God and our relationship with him. This is a whole new view. In this view we see a oneness, a relationship. A whole new way to look at existence. Existence beyond life, existence beyond matter and energy. A different knowledge, a different respect beyond what we see or think. A reality that can trump all other realities.

We were made to work with the angels and to do the works of God through the seven spirits of God. Our part was the Revelation Knowledge and the Respect, the fear of God. From Proverbs 8 we know that the fear of the Lord is hatred of evil. We also know that Revelation Knowledge is God given insight something that you know that you know. And

no one can take it from you. The understanding and wisdom however belong to the angels as well as powers and counsel. These can be provided to you as you request them since as stated in Hebrews 1:14.

Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

But we chose a different path and now we are using our own understanding and wisdom instead of God's. And when we don't get our own way we use our might and what we understand of the powers of nature to change things in our favor. Then we select a counsel of people to guide us to build mighty nations bent on doing evil against each other. We've moved out of God's purpose into the state where things are today. Just understand this. The devil needs us to do his work. He has only dark, dismissive knowledge and a disrespect for God that requires your earthy understanding and wisdom, power and counsel to do his damage. Turn your back on him! Instead look at leaving the world behind as

much as possible and just walk with God.

When you react to the world it's God you taking your frustrations out on. He's been quiet, suffering in silence since He knows you didn't mean it but it still hurts. He watches over you as you sleep trying to comfort you. Many of us can not be comforted; we are too tangled in our hurts. We feel our hurts, the loss of our dreams, the abuse, the pain that we suffer from others. Many of us know fear, absolute terror as the agents of death and destruction march across our landscape. We hide in our shelters and in our homes as we await our end. You need to be hiding in God. Even though you moved out of God's plan He still went looking for you. Regardless of your faith and understanding will you accept God's calling? And this is not in response to any person's challenge; this just between you and God. Most religions in my thinking is just another form of devil worship. Instead this has to be one on one, between you and God. When you look around are you seeing things or are you seeing God? When you walk around are

you walking in your grief or in the joy of the Lord? Where is your treasure, in God or in the world? Where is your heart? Is your peace from the world or from God? These are the questions you have to answer. And you can not answer these questions with a simple nod of the head, this is not an intellectual exercise, you have to walk in this constantly. This is a choice to live differently in grace and love attacking nobody. Nobody! Anyone else is God's problem not yours. Jesus paid the price for you to walk with him in innocence with clean garments, don't get them dirty again. And if you want to know what He's done please read my book, but for now simply confess your sins to Him and accept the life He has for you. It's as simple as that! Don't make it anymore complicated than that.

I myself only know of one answer in the Christian Bible, the book of Matthew chapters 4, 5, 6 and 7. Jesus taught that it is better to be poor than rich, to be hungry than full, to be persecuted than loved if you are doing it for righteousness sake. It is better to give of what

you have in excess then to receive more excess. He even said not to worry about what you will eat or drink but first find the kingdom of God, and God's righteousness and everything you will need shall be added unto you. So where is the kingdom of God?

I had continued to meditate on this gift and realize now this is a civilization changing moment. This really does changes everything in how we live. This third level of creation, this relationship with God is the Kingdom of Heaven that Jesus talked about. And it's the Kingdom of Heaven because we are located in Heaven. It's the Kingdom of where we actually are. Our bodies are on earth but we operate them from Heaven since we have to be infinitely far away for life to work. Awareness is infinite speed across the singularity space. To have any frequency, any wavelength, there has to be infinite distance involved. And this infinite separation causes time. Time is the mechanism that will bring an end to the works of the devil.

So this place, the Kingdom of Heaven, is a entirely different universe operating by different rules. One is there's no time. We are not infinitely far apart. There is only a universal connection, a "Nowness" to everything here. And yet we can talk to God and have faith that He can change things. This universe has more freedoms than the one we know.

And to understand this universe we need to go back to what Jesus said about the Kingdom of God and the Kingdom of Heaven.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou does, except God be with him.

Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how

shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reprov'd. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

John 3:1-21 King James Version

So if you are in the flesh all you have is an awareness of this flesh. To have an awareness of the Kingdom of Heaven you have to be born of the spirit. Otherwise it is invisible to you. And the only way to be born of the spirit is to believe that Jesus is the son of God and to live your life in the light of God in heaven. Jesus brought us this gift, the ability to live through Him in Heaven and to have His nature replace our natures. But to walk in this light we must constantly check our motivations and when we find ourselves living in error then we have to confess our sins to God and get back in the light. Simply put this is a relationship with God.

And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto

you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

Mark 10:13-25 King James Version

Money cultivates self esteem. If the important things in your life centers around satisfying your esteem through material possessions then the Lord cannot use you. He has to be the primary importance in your life. And He didn't tell everyone that followed Him to give away all of their possessions and cash. Your walk with Him is individual, but He does direct your life for His purposes. You have to be

ready to surrender everything.

For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. For he that in these things serve Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men. Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.

Romans 14:17-19

Righteousness, peace, and joy exists in heaven by Jesus and is given to us through the Holy Ghost. And if we live in this existence we can radiate this into the world. And the world will fight us and try to take our joy and peace. The people who live in the flesh want us to live in the flesh also. To live under intellectual rules of conduct as if that produces righteousness. To stay quiet as if that can substitute for real peace. To be entertained as if that was joy.

Righteousness, peace, and joy is the anchor of our heart that keeps us grounded to God. Jesus

said that we could speak to the mountains in our lives and cast them into the sea as long as we have faith and did not have doubt in our hearts. How can you have doubt if your innermost heart is in total peace, absolute joy and in right standing with God?

I have to be honest with you; we're living in the last days where the devil is out to destroy us. The forth beast is already here in the world is shown by the Isis radicals and the states of Saudi Arabia and Iran. And with the other beasts, Russia, China, and the United States, they will continue to battle each other like a giant "Punch and Judy" show with the Devil as puppeteer. The purpose of this show is to steal your soul, your future. You will be asked (at first) to take the mark of the beast, all of your money, your possession, your employment will be tied to this mark. And if you take the mark you will not go to heaven but will be thrown into the lake of fire. Many people already have the mark on their lives affecting their thinking and actions. Some people worship money, some power. Some are

brainwashed to follow some cause or some political system. The only way to tell if it is too late for you is to come to Jesus and confess your sins. He actually will but there will be a point where you will stop coming to Him for forgiveness. Just remember that the lake of fire is forever.

Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 2:37-38

The baptism is the Gospel. You need to go under the waters dying to this life and come up anew living in Jesus. Leave the past behind and live new in Him. And when He comes back you will be with Him forever.

Now I know the secret that has been hidden

from people for ages. We've always felt so hopeless against the effects of weather, wild animals, ruthless people, and now civilization in general. But the truth was just the opposite.

And the same day, when the evening was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side. And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships. And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full. And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is it that ye have no faith? And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?
Mark 4:35-41

You see I thought that I would get this wrong in my very first paragraph. My original name for this paper was “Exploring a new Thought”. It wasn't a new thought, it was a realization, a revelation! I actually was in the Kingdom of Heaven just for a moment and I replaced it with a thought! We are cheating ourselves with our thinking, limiting ourselves with our presumptions and our traditions. There may be no limits on what we can do through Jesus.

But this is not the powers of the mind, this has nothing to do with your brain. And you can't give yourselves faith by developing a mindset. Otherwise like Thales the Greek philosopher you will fall into the well and die. To actually have faith you have to give up this world for that world. You have to listen to Jesus putting His words into your heart and then do what God asks you to do in agreement with the biblical record of His character.

Now it is time for you to start walking to your future knowing that Jesus is the finisher of our faith. So follow Him and keep His words

inside of you. And don't be fearful but be full of faith.

Yours

David Butterworth

May 30, 2015

References

Page	Reference
Page 21	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 23	Enotes - Hamlet Act 1 Scene 5
Page 83-89	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 92	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 94-95	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 97-99	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 103-104	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 110	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 115-120	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 121-122	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 127-131	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 139-141	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 143-146	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible

Page	Reference
Page 150-153	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 156-159	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 166-168	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 171-172	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 176-177	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 208	NIST Reference - Gravity Constant
Page 217	NIST Reference - Planks Constant
Page 228	NIST Reference - Fine Structure Constant
Page 243	Britannica Enc. - Newton's Laws
Page 249	Britannica Enc. - Lorenz Transformation
Page 252	Britannica Enc. - General Theory of Relativity
Page 255	Britannica Enc. - Schrodinger's Equation
Page 257	The Dirac Equation - Dirac's Equation
Page 261	Britannica Enc. - Maxwell's Equation

Page	Reference
Page 266	Britannica Enc. - Magnetic Force Equation
Page 279	Britannica Enc. - Thermodynamics
Page 350	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 352-354	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 357	Britannica Enc. - Yin Yang Taijitu
Page 358-360	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 363	Enotes - Macbeth Act 5 Scene 5
Page 364-365	Britannica Enc. - Galileo, Darwin
Page 371-380	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 373	Britannica Enc. - Pope Innocent III
Page 385	Britannica Enc. - 1930 Stock Market Crash
Page 387	The True Cost of Credit - Credit Card
Page 287	JP's Real Estate Charts - Cost of Houses
Page 388	State of Working America - Wealth Distribution

Page	Reference
Page 389	Top Foreign Stocks - Price of Gold
Page 389	Center for Responsible Politics - PAC
Page 390	Britannica Enc. - Types of Banks
Page 391	Britannica Enc. - Stare Decisis
Page 393	Britannica Enc. - Types of Laws
Page 393	US Code -
Page 393	United States Reports
Page 393	Code of Federal Regulations
Page 393	Center for Responsible Politics - Lobbyists
Page 397	US National Debt Clock FAQ - National Debt
Page 397	CNN Money - People on Medicaid/Medicare
Page 408-417	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 420	Human Population Growth Charts – population
Page 423-424	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 427-428	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible

Page	Reference
Page 430-431	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 433-436	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 441-444	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 446-458	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 459-503	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 505-525	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 527-532	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 534	My wife's painting - Elizabeth Butterworth
Page 535	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 537-540	Kenneth Copeland Ministries - Story changed
Page 545	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 548	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 552-558	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible
Page 560-561	Bill McGinnis Ministries - King James Bible

The end of the book

The end of the book